Michael’s
Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown
I Michael Brown have put together a team of Men & Women who have come together to help empower & enlighten the minds of our youth.

Our mission is to give information that can be processed mentally to gain knowledge and apply its purpose in your life based on our experiences being incarcerated. We want to inform those defiant ones who are considering a life of crime or who are doing criminal Activities.

Don't become a statistic. Beware of the "beast." That is taking our kids away; this beast is the Department of Corrections. Once you are in, it can eat you alive. I once read that the real joy comes from giving. It comes from service; it comes from doing things for other people that is what is so powerful about this. Nothing will make you happier than giving. We know every day we are faced with challenges & temptation to conform. This is critically important to remember as you set out in the world. You will come in contact with people who, whether they mean to or not will exert pressure on you to conform, however, you are in a position to influence them for good. You can help them make better decisions just by example. "But to be that good example" Become a positive role model. Remember peer pressure works in both directions.

Our goal is to inform the youth ages 12-18 years old that we must be careful what we put into our minds. The things we dwell on or fill our minds with will often come bubbling backup, whether we want them to or not.
This book provides accounts of my life memories, growing up in New Orleans, Louisiana in a dysfunctional environment that became drug infested by the crack, epidemic. It is also a warning to those who are living a life of crime. You will also see by my ignorance, how I almost destroyed my life and others. Now the word ignorance simply means not knowing. I pray that this book will be inspiring to the reader. May God give you an ear to hear the words that I am writing?

I would love to share my story with you.

I know words want make a difference to most of you. However, if you would just open your mind perhaps these stories might save your life or at least Point you in the right direction. I decided while I am incarcerated to seize this opportunity to improve myself and my way of thinking, thanks to the people I have encountered while I have been incarcerated.

By Michael Brown
Michael's Life Time Memories
By Michael Brown

This book provides accounts of my life memories, growing up in New Orleans, Louisiana in a dysfunctional environment that became drug infested by the crack, epidemic. It is also a warning to those who are living a life of crime. You will also see by my ignorance, how I almost destroyed my life and others. Now the word ignorance simply means not knowing. I pray that this book will be inspiring to the reader. May God give you an ear to hear the words that I am writing?

I would love to share my story with you. I know words want make a difference to most of you. However, if you would just open your mind perhaps these stories might save

Your life or at least Point you in the right direction. I decided while I am incarcerated to seize this opportunity to improve myself and my way of thinking, thanks to the people I have encountered while I have been incarcerated.
Michael's Life Time Memories
By Michael Brown
An Autobiography

Michael Brown
GDC # 1161959
Baldwin State Prison
P.O. Box 218
Hardwick, Ga. 31034

Copyright © 2015 First Edition
Non-Fiction
Dedication

To Kathryn and Claudette My beautiful sisters I love you so much. Gregory and Willie my brother-in-laws I love you. My Nephew Lamond and his Beautiful wife Nicole and kids, I love you. To my Nephew Lewanye and his beautiful wife Dacia and kids, I Love you. To my Nieces Keshau and Lanica, I love you and miss you. My Nephew first Lieutenant Burns, I salute you. I love you Willie may god bless you. I want you to get a sense of who I use to be and who I am now. That is the whole reason for writing this book. I pray that when I get release from prison that we could all spend some time together I am proud of you all.

“Don’t judge me by my past I don’t live there anymore.”
Michael's Life Time Memories

Chapter 22 ......................................................... 102
  Going out on a limb ........................................ 102
Chapter 23 ......................................................... 107
  All by myself ............................................... 107
Chapter 23 ......................................................... 109
  California .................................................... 109
Chapter 23 ......................................................... 129
  Marriage life ............................................... 129
Chapter 24 ......................................................... 134
  When it all falls down ..................................... 134
Chapter 25 ......................................................... 141
  Living the lifestyle ........................................ 141
Chapter 26 ......................................................... 153
  The feds are watching ................................... 153
Chapter 27 ......................................................... 156
  Atlanta ....................................................... 156
Chapter 28 ......................................................... 157
  Meeting Barbara ........................................... 157
Chapter 29 ......................................................... 165
  Going home for the last time ......................... 165
Chapter 30 ......................................................... 169
  Blame ......................................................... 169
  Acknowledgements ....................................... 170
Epilogue ............................................................. 172
Reference page ............................................... 175
You will constantly hear me praise my family during the course of reading this book only because I love my family so much. I had the greatest parents and sisters in the world.

Here is what I say to you. Everything I tell you comes out of my own experience. Everything I understand, I understand because once I did it all wrong and had to find a better way. To women, I say: I have done it all—lost my way, lost my identity, clung to my wife, and had to find my way again—and again. To everyone who reads my book, I say do not be impatient with yourself. Growing takes time and help and support, and faith.

Each time I face the difficulties of a new dilemma, I remind myself that everything I’ve known and have learned has come because of a hard experience that I walked through—not away from. Then, I went through it—learned from the experience—and now I can celebrate what it showed me.

Everyone wants personal power. I do. Oh yes, you do too. There is nothing wrong with wanting that. That is only part of wanting to be as good as you can be.

Nor do I think that people, once empowered, will abuse their power. Only people who feel small and frustrated about it, have to kick their dogs. Power itself is a neutral force. It can be used for good or for ill. Nevertheless, feeling comfortable with it, feeling competent about what you do, will free you from the need to prove anything at all.

You decide—and you are perfectly qualified to do so—how you will use your power. You can learn—if you do not already know—how to be reflective, to think about how your power affects others. When you think about that, you can use it for good purposes—to help others grow, and to grow yourself even further.

Nobody likes to feel like they are without power. Children have very little power, maybe that is why there is a bully on every block. Children have to spend a long time getting their relationships to each other adjusted, and they do not have much experience to help them.

We tell them, “be nice.” That is fine, but they need to know—as do we all—how to be nice and still be true to themselves and not restrict their own sense of power. Let us face it, we all need to feel that we matter in our worlds, that people notice us and take us seriously. It is only when we do not feel that way that we do not treat others right. That is when our power can become abusive.
I once read, exposing our secrets makes us feel vulnerable, because they’re been hidden for so long, but only when we are willing to be in our vulnerability will we be blessed with the gift of our own light, so on that note, I will share this with you.

By the time I was twelve, I was all too familiar with the voice in my head telling me that I wasn’t good enough, that I was nothing like my sisters, that they were smarter than me. No one was there for me, to make sure that I was getting the proper education in school, I must admit I was slow in learning, maybe because of my attention span, or maybe because I just wasn’t interested in school.

All I knew was I was in desperate need to feel love, I wanted what some of my friends had, someone there to help nurture me and to help guide me in the right direction, to help me achieve in life.

Deep down inside I truly believed that something was wrong with me, I felt lost, and alone, I went to great lengths, to conceal my flaws I quickly learned how to charm people flashing my biggest smile to get people to notice me.

I thought that if I could seem that I was slow and helpless, I would get the love and acceptance that I hungered for.

I also believed that if my family loved me enough I would no longer have to listen to the awful thoughts that filled my mind or endure the painful feelings that I was consumed with. For a long time I blamed everything on my family, I blamed my mother for not being tough on me.

Then I blamed my father for not teaching me spirituality and for not teaching me how to be a man. Then there were my sisters. I blamed them for leaving me to fend for myself.

Then it was the breakup of my parents, it would unleash all the pain that was stored up in me. It added to my deep-seated fear that I was flawed.

My pain was so overwhelming, as years passed, I became skilled at finding ways to hide my pain from myself and others. When I couldn’t find someone to validate me or tell me I was okay, I would numb myself by turning to drugs, and criminal activities, and fast friends in a desperate attempt to fit in and get the love and safety I could not find in my family or self.

The deeper truth is that I have a story, but I am not my story.

Managing my insanity was a full time job. I began trying to quiet the constant internal noise by drowning myself with the dope game of drugs, and women.

I thought that if I had the nice car and clothes and the best-looking women I could rise above the despair and hopelessness that always seemed to pop up after joy.

Every painful event of my life has brought me great gifts. I find these gifts effortlessly.

I am always baffled by the long-standing grudges we hold against ourselves. Why we continually blame ourselves for the events that happened ten, twenty, thirty years ago.

Since I have been in prison, I have spent years in the self-help movements working on myself and then acting as a guide for others.

I ask myself why we feel so worthy of complete and total salvation or of absolution for the crimes of our past. I have spent years dwelling on the question.

The destructiveness of self-blame and self-loathing can be seen throughout our society. Addiction, violence, abuse, and underachievement permeate all of our lives.

I once read we will stay in our stories until we extract all the lessons and wisdom we need in order to deliver our unique contribution to the world.

It is important for us to understand that we created our stories with all their magnificence and all their despair in order to learn the particular lessons we need most. Our stories contain all the wisdom we need to become the people we long to be. The lessons for each of us are different.

We have walked through different gardens. We have cried at different funerals and we have knelt at different graves. Each of us has different triumphs and failures, and has different lessons to learn.

Nevertheless, the divine guidance has been instrumental in every experience of our lives, showing us ever more clearly, who we are, and giving us exactly what we need, to fulfill our unique purpose. Our life
stories have equipped each of us with a particular set of skills and a unique blend of wisdom that we are meant to deliver to the world.

To live outside of our stories, we must courageously walk through our drama-ridden lives, and begin the process of embracing and loving all that we are and all that we are not.

We must take the time to examine each and every chapter of our lives, exposing the places where we are still stuck, hurt, and incomplete.

We must be willing to take responsibility for our current circumstance and to let go of all the baggage we are still carrying around from our past. We must commit to traveling the path through our personal dramas and to finally make peace with our stories. The power of the process.

All men of whatsoever quality they are, who have done anything of excellence, or which may properly resemble excellence, ought, if they are persons of truth and honesty, describe their life with their own hand.

However, they ought not to attempt so fine an enterprise until they passed the age of forty. This duty occurs to my own mind as I am travelling beyond the term of fifty-four years.

Many things I can remember, such as happen to all who live upon our earth, and from those adversities, I am now freer than at any previous period in my life.

It seems to me that I enjoy greater content of soul and heath of body than ever I did in years past. I can also bring to mind some pleasant goods and some inestimable evils which, when I turn my thoughts backward, strike terror in me, and astonishment that I should have reached this age of fifth-four, where, thanks be to God, I am still travelling prosperously forward.

I pray that the reader enjoy reading my life memories.
Sections

Growing Up In the Sixties
My Adolescence Stages
Growing up in the seventies
New Orleans History
Experiencing the Wonders of the World
Meeting Greg
Leaving the nest
Just Visiting
On my own
My European Experience
Going home on leave
Back to my European Experience
My observation
Settling down at home
My big sister
Playing the field
Yolande
Taking a chance on love
Drama
Michael & Yolande
Deception
Going out on a limb
All by myself
California
Marriage life
When it all falls down
Living the lifestyle
The feds are watching
Atlanta
Meeting Barbara
Going home for the last time
Blame
Prologue

"WOW" it is 2015! Hi, my name is Michael Brown, I am reflecting back on my life as I sit here incarcerated in the department of corrections.

I know many people have had a rough life. I know also that even more have had a rougher life than mine.

My Message of this testimony is for those who have had an easy life. Those who would not know what a rough life is, except for what they have seen on television or in a movie. I pray that my story and my testimony will help someone.

The story, which you are about to read is true and documented.

First, I want to prepare you. Remember, this is for those who have led a sheltered life and do not know what goes on in most lives.

I decided to write some of my lifetime memories; if you chose to continue reading this book, you will see the highs and the lows of the beautiful life God has blessed me with.

You will also see by my ignorance, how I almost destroyed my life and others. Now the word ignorance simply means not knowing. I pray that this book will be inspiring to the reader. May God give you an ear to hear the words that I am writing?

Hosea 4:6-7

My people are destroyed for the lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children.

I thank God for never giving up on me, allowing me to come to the knowledge of accepting Jesus as my lord and Savior. Allowing me to change my life and become the man, I was created to be.

"The people, when they beheld Him, were greatly amazed, and running to Him saluted Him."

—Mark 9:15

How great the difference between Moses and Jesus! When the prophet of Horeb had been forty days upon the mountain, he underwent a kind of transfiguration, so that his countenance shone with exceeding brightness, and he put a veil over his face, for the people could not endure to look upon his glory. Not so our Savior.

He had been transfigured with a greater glory than that of Moses, and yet, it is not written that the people were blinded by the blaze of His countenance, but rather they were amazed, and running to Him, they saluted Him. The glory of the law repels, but the greater glory of Jesus attracts.

Though Jesus is holy and just, yet blended with His purity there is so much of truth and grace, that sinners run to Him amazed at His goodness, fascinated by His love; they salute Him, become His disciples, and take Him to be their Lord and Master. Reader, it may be that just now you are blinded by the dazzling brightness of the law of God.

You feel its claims on your conscience, but you cannot keep it in your life. Not that you find fault with the law, on the contrary, it commands your profoundest esteem, still you are in nowise drawn by it to God; you are rather hardened in heart, and are verging towards desperation. Ah, poor heart! Turn thine eye from Moses, with all his repelling splendor, and look to Jesus, resplendent with milder glories. Behold His flowing wounds and thorn-crowned head!

He is the Son of God, and therein He is greater than Moses is, but He is the Lord of love, and therein more tender than the lawgiver does. He bore the wrath of God, and in His death revealed more of God's justice than Sinai on a blaze, but that justice is now vindicated, and henceforth it is the guardian of believers in Jesus. Look, sinner, to the bleeding Savior, and as thou feelest the attraction of His love, fly to His arms, and thou shalt be saved.
Growing Up In the Sixties

September twenty-third, nineteen sixty, time 1:59 A.M. New Orleans, Charity Hospital of Louisiana, I
Michael David Brown was born. We live at 3905 Tchoupitoulas Street. As I remember, my father was born
in Schriever, Louisiana.

My mother was born in Chattanooga, Tennessee. I have two sisters Kathryn Ann Brown and Claudette
Marie Brown. I am the baby of the family.

Oh yeah by the way I am a spoil brat! You see I come from a military family where everyone of my
family members are veterans of the Arm Forces my father and mother both served in the Korean War.

My father was a strict man a good father to us and my mother was the most caring person you every
would meet she never whip me a day in her life, now my father was a different story you will see, just keep
reading.

By the way, my mother name is Magdalene Brown and my father name is Earl Brown. Now you have
been introduce to my family, now I will let the story began.

Growing up for me was like any other young boy in the south, you see I live right on the river of the
Mississippi. The riverfront where all the merchant marines and long shore men and dockworkers were, I
lived down from the Lyon center this was a community center like the Y.M.C.A. where the kids would go
swimming, it was a place to have fun. My neighborhood was the twelfth ward it was a crime-infested place. I
was very young when we were there.

I can remember running from the water melon man, he use to chase behind us with a pitch folk, I would
yell and cry so loud everyone would come out their homes and tell him to leave us alone, he was really scary.
Unfortunately, he committed suicide, he jump off the Mississippi River Bridge. This was the first time I
experience some one dying I had to be around 4 years old.

You had to see me in those days; I always wore a cowboy hat and boots, and a six-shooter with holster.

Eventually we move to a better neighborhood, the street was Dauphine Street, now let me tell you
about the street I lived on. This was a kids dream you hear me. We had a big fig tree in our front yard that
produced the biggest figs you ever wanted to eat, across the street, we had a bakery, and we had an ice-cream
parlor, Benjamin Franklin Department store, Wool Co Department store. We had all kind of stores on our
street this was awesome, especially around Christmas time with all of the lights. Then the year 1965 the
month of June my father move us again from the city to the suburbs. This was a newly develop subdivision,
it was an all black neighborhood it was call Kennedy Heights located on the west bank of the Mississippi
River. It was about five subdivisions in one.

The town is Avondale and it is located in Jefferson parish now this neighborhood had nothing. All we
had was groves of pecan trees, and newly houses to play in. Across the highway was the white neighborhood
they had Winn-Dixie, TG&Y stores, pool hall, you name it they had it. They even had a fire Department all
this was across the highway. This Highway was U.S. 90 this is one of the most dangerous highways in the
United States, someone was always getting into a fatal accident.

The day we move in our new home my parents took off from work so we could move in. I remember
my father taking us across the street to our new neighbors and asking this woman can she watch us until he
get back, I can recall sitting in this little rocking chair and this girl coming up to me and telling me to get up
out of her chair, I told her no. I didn’t think anything of it because I was with my sisters and they was always
protected of me, so while we waited I continue to sit down until I got ready to get up, we became acquainted
with all the other kids there, and what do you know, they became our best friends, and we are still friends
today. Ms: Ratcliff and her husband both die and three of their children, died as well.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Now the house where we lived was a three-bedroom house with garage, big back yard, and a front yard. Everybody had pecan trees in their yard. Everyone but us, I am not kidding you.

Everyone except us, now you remember I told you I was a spoil brat? I had all kind of toys. My sister and I use to play together all the time. She had me playing with her paper dolls, and her baby dolls. We use to get the cook books out and go to work, trying to make all kind of deserts, on the weekends we would make pop corn balls, we would make candy apples, and we would try to make pecan sticks this was one of our favorites. I never had to do anything around the house but wake up, I did not even have to cut the grass are wash dishes, only if I wanted to.

I remember my sisters cutting the grass and washing dishes. Kathryn and I would watch Shirley temple movies, and Blondie and Dagwood movies. Claudette my oldest sister was busy doing her own thing. I have two of the greatest sisters in the world, we never had a fight, and I have never ever been disrespectful to them. Kathryn was always like a mother to me and she is just one year older than I am. These were some special times that I will always cherish.

I never played organize ball growing up. I was one of those kids that were in the cub scouts. Going to summer camp, my sister Kathryn was a brownie; both of my sisters played sports they had a house full of trophies, do not get me wrong. I played street ball; I just did not like the organize ball, I did not like people telling me what to do. I do not know where I got that from, maybe you will figure it out by the time you finish reading my life.

I remember my father talking me into going to summer camp one year I didn’t want to go but he gave me twenty five dollars to go and this was a lot of money for a young kid in those days, if I can recall I think it was for one week.

Back then I was into hanging out going fishing, hunting, craw fishing; picking berries, playing marbles. I would leave the house early in the morning with my friends, I will get some meat from the refrigerator and off we went to the creek to go and catch some crawfish, and Claudette would tell me to be careful. I love playing in the woods; after a long after noon, I would come back with my crawfish and wash them off put them in a pot with some salt and boil them and eat them up. We also use to play war games, hide and seek you name it. We all had BB guns I can recall when I first got my gun for Christmas.

We all went hunting, my crew, and me. I shot my first bird, it was a great big black crow, I was so happy I took it home and showed my sisters and they told me I should be shame of myself for killing that poor bird, I didn’t pay them any mind. I pick the feathers off him cleaned him inside and out then all of a sudden I could not go through with it. I buried him, now my intention was to eat him.

I had planned to deep-fry him and eat him, but I lost my appetite. Those were some of the funniest times of my member.

I do not want to get ahead of myself but I want to share another story with you while I am on the subject, one of my friends Reginald, his dad had a boat and we would go fishing, when the fish was not biting he would let us steer the boat.

Now Reginald was like a brother to me he is one of my best friends, I introduced him to his wife. He has two beautiful boys, His parents was like my second mom and dad.

Every where they went, they took me with them. Mr. Bush, that’s Reginald father name, he taught me how to work on cars and got me into drag racing. I was all ways over at their house learning how to work on cars or learning how to cook.

I also learned how to water ski, we would ski up and down the lake. We kept this up once we got older this outing. You will see as time goes on. Continue reading.

I had another neighbor who played a part in my life, her name was Mrs. Gibson, now this woman she was good to me, I had a major crush on her.

I can recall one day my father and I was in the garage under my father’s’ car, he was changing the oil. Mrs. Gibson walked up and she did not see me, and she was speaking to my father, and I heard her tell him, Earl Brown you know what you need? You need some of this good ole juicy p####. When she seen me, all
she did was winked her eye at me, she had some of the biggest breast you ever wanted to see at least that’s how I was thinking at that period of time in my life.

We use to call her big titty Gibb. Now this woman was married and she and her husband use to come by the house play cards with my mother and father some nights.

Mrs. Gibson and her husband separated soon after we met them. After her husband left, I notice she got real close to the family she would take me to her house and feed me. She would take me to the movies. I remember seeing the movie “Hang em High” with Clint East Wood. She even took me to NASA to see the moon rocks after Neil Armstrong walked on the moon.

That was neat touching real moon rocks and seeing the actual Apollo spacecraft. I will never forget those times, I am not 100% sure, but I think my father was hitting Mrs. Gibson. 😊

I had another neighbor her name was Mrs. Rochelle she was also a good friend of the family she would whip me if ever she caught me doing something I had no business doing. She had a son, his name was Homer, he was much older then I.

Now Mrs. Rochelle had this big dog, great dame mix with Doberman this dog was so huge she use to sit on top of a six foot fence and bark all the time her name was princess, they fed her big cow bones the size of a Volkswagen.

She would also give me bones to give our dog we had a crazy big German Sheppard name Chico. Now Mrs. Rochelle would go out of town a lot. She would always give me the keys to her house whenever she goes out of town, so I could feed her dog. I would go over, stay at the house, and watch television, she allowed me to eat what I wanted in the refrigerator, and she would always make all kind of pies for me.

At Christmas time, she would have a present under her tree for me. Whenever I am in town, I will stop by to check on her and see how she is doing.

Now our crazy dog Chico was so bad one time he broke out of the yard and ran after the mailman and he dropped all of his mail after that he would not deliver our mail to us anymore we had to pick it up at the post office, the milkman also stop delivering our milk because of Chico.

Mr. Ball was my other neighbor his wife die of asthma, I spent a great deal of my growing up with this family as well they always took me to church with them I enjoyed this experience especially the choir.

I really think to this day that the seed of Christ was planted in me because of my going to church with them and I thank God that he chose me.

I was always going to their relatives homes with them I have met all their cousins’ aunts,’ uncles and we are all like family today. Mr. Ball was into boxing and he would take us to the boxing matches’ I will talk more about the Ball family later keep reading

To say the least my neighbors was the best, I love the people in my neighborhood, we went through so much together we survived Hurricanes, and Floods, and Blackouts and the Klu Klux Klan.

Now you recall I told you that the neighborhood that I live in was all black, so you know the schools was the same way. They started integrating the schools. When this started, we were being bused in an all white neighborhood.

At one time, we were on a platoon system because of over crowdedness. We would go to school from seven thirty to eleven thirty and then the next group of students would go from twelve thirty to three thirty. I actually enjoyed going to school on the platoon system.

Riding on the school bus was always fun, the bus stop was directly in front of our house, the school I went to was call live oak elementary, we had to travel about six and a half miles on the river road get there.

When I got older, I would come home on leave and jog the same distance without stopping I did that for exercise. Moreover, to stay in shape, that was then.

We had to past this big old plantation with slave quarters’ roles, and roles of all kind of trees, Pecan trees, fruit trees you name it. This plantation was the Tchoupitoulas plantation, when we got bored at home with no school on the weekends we started exploring our surroundings, you see we got curious from traveling on the school bus.
Michael’s Life Time Memories  

By Michael Brown

We put our little minds together, and you know kids will be kids. The very same plantation on our way to school that had us so mesmerized.

We founded how to take the best route on getting back to our prize. The prize of course would be the fruit trees.

We started sneaking in raiding them, and Getting shot at in the process. Thank God, no one was hit.

Come to find out later the owner was shooting salt rocks at us.

You remember when I told you that we had nothing in our neighborhood. Well come to find out this was a place to get into all kind of trouble. Straight down my street, about a little more than a quarter of a mile they built our park and right beyond the park were a huge train yard

This is where we started hopping trains at a very young age. We were getting into all kind of things.

Now behind the train depot was the levy and the Mississippi River.

My sisters and I, we always had the house to ourselves my parents worked all the time so Claudette was in charge to watch us, so everyone hung out at our house. Whenever I wanted to go hang out with my friends, I had to ask Claudette.

Claudette would always tell me to be careful and do not stay away too long. Claudette was all ways into music that is where I got my rhythm from her. She was always dancing and singing having parties. Our neighborhood use to have block parties on the weekend I can recall one time seeing Millie Jackson this had to be in the late sixties or early seventies. They always had famous artist who was just getting a name for themselves.

I can remember Claudette always on the adding machine sitting at the table adding up things for my father. This was doing the time my father was working for the insurance company.

My father bought us ten speed bikes, me and my sister Kathryn we both had the same color bikes, they were a beautiful orange and white, the day after Christmas I was with my friends riding we all went to the store behind the tracks.

When we came out someone had stolen my bicycle, I was so hurt. Now by the time I got back home and told everyone what had happen my sister Kathryn gave me her bike that is the kind of sisters I got.

Angels. My friends and I would ride all day, we played on the levy of the Mississippi river, and eventually we started swimming in the river, one of my friends drowned in that river. He thought the water was shallow, but little did he know that a sinkhole was waiting to swallow him up.

Aftet that, we were not allowed to ever go to the river again by ourselves. So we went back to the trains we started finding all sorts of items walking the railroad tracks we found big boxes of instant grits, one time we found boxes of jeans, shoes, watches, the whole neighborhood was flooded with police.

Come to find out someone had broken into the train and stolen its contents and stash them. In addition, we were the ones to find their stash.

So now, the word is out that they are going to jump on us, for taking their stash and these people were much older than we were. These were the neighborhood bullies. Therefore, you know what we did. We click up and we started our little gang to fight back if they tried to mess with any of us.

Nothing ever came of that incident, but we kept our little street gang, we had to stick together because if you go into another neighborhood by yourself are you go on another street you would have to fight.

Every time we went to a house party, we would travel deep because we knew we would be fighting before the end of the night.

We always had to fight our way back home I am not kidding you we was fighting all the time. I use to love to fight my crew and me. It was mandatory even if we gotten beaten up which was never, but so long you fight back and if someone was getting the best of one of us we would all jump in and take care of the situation.

We use to have quarter parties and waistline parties in the neighborhood all the time. Now waistline parties are when you are charged by your waistline if your waistline was 27 inches that are how much you had to pay to get in. We had some out of sight neighborhood parties growing up I and my crew was going to all of them. Nevertheless, you know what. No one picked on me because of my big sister.
Michael’s Life Time Memories  By Michael Brown

She was also in a street gang I though, because of all the girls she was hanging with, I called it a gang because they were mean as hell and they were always deep.

But they were sweet too me and fine as all out doors, I can remember a lot of their friends would try to make their boyfriends jealousy by hugging on me and kissing all over me, I use to eat this up. I had so many crushes on my sisters’ girl friends. I would eventually have my day with many of my sisters’ girl friends. By Kathryn being the president of the yearbook club she had pictures of every girl that went to her school. She went to an all girl school, Higgins high school.

I can recall my friends and I would sneak and get whole of the pictures and pick the girls that we would call our girl friends.

I can recall my oldest sister beating this one girl up right in front of our house now this girl had went for bad in the neighborhood. Claudette did not fear her and my sister beat her butt. They had to pull my sister off the girl she try to bite my sister if I am not mistaking she bit her under her eye. After that, my sister got all the respect no one ever tried her again matter of fact whenever anyone messed with me that is who I would go and get my big sister.

Later down the line in life, that same girl my sister beat up I became good friends with her, she had gotten on the dope, but she was a functional addict.

Many of my friends was getting jack, getting their lunch money taken from them all the time.

But because of Claudette I could go anywhere and all they use to say was that’s peanut butter little brother don’t mess with him. Peanut butter was Claudette’s nickname.

We had these older guys around, a lot of them were my friends older brothers, they all had motorcycles and they told us to give them some money and that they would take us to the lake front, this went on for a month or two and we were giving them every penny we got our hands on. One day we spotted them all at the store drinking liquor laughing about how they were tricking us out of our money. We were so mad at them, but what could we have done? We had been duke.

Doing this time, everybody had to be inside when the streetlights came on. You would hear parents calling from all directions for their kids to get in doors. Some father’s would whistle, some mothers would yell. We all knew our special calling, this would end our eventful day we’ll say our goodbyes and meet up again in the morning.

These were some of the best of times growing up now that I look back, being at home with my family.

My mother would be home from work, my father also would be home. My siblings as well, everyone would gather around the television, mother would be in the kitchen preparing dinner.

Kathryn and Claudette would sometimes be doing their homework, On the other hand whatever girls do. I am playing with my father, hearing my mother telling my father that he is being too rough with me. My father saying I am making him tuff honey he is all right this is my little man.

My father was always punching on me he would hit me with his left hand and call it his powerhouse hand and then he would hit me with his right hand and call that one his dynamite hand.

Then he would start tickling me until I would urinate on myself and I would cry my heart out. My sisters would laugh at me. My mother telling them that it is not funny to leave me alone.

Stop making fun of me! By then my mother would stop what she was doing, and come and rescue me, help clean me up change my clothes go back to doing what she was doing, getting dinner ready for us. Then guest what? My father would do it all over again.

That is why today I cannot stand to be tickle. I am so ticklish.

As I reflect back on my life, in my opinion family is very important.

During the 1960s, several American television shows portrayed an idealized middle-class family consisting of a wise breadwinner father, a cheerful and attractive wife, and socially and academically successful children. American actor Robert Young, who starred as Jim Anderson in the series “Father Knows Best,” epitomized the role of all-knowing, morally superior husband and father.

These types of shows were a driving force for society to emulate how families should be.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

The media help shape and mold our society on how it should look and act, when the Cosby show came out it was so invigorating to see an upper middle class black family television show. Wait I am getting off track forgive me of my opinion.

The TV shows I can remember watching were the smother brothers, Hew Haw, Mash, and Hogan Heroes, Rat Patrol, Mission Impossible, Dark Shadows, Love American Style the Brady bunch, Family Affair. Back then, the televisions went off the air at 11:30 pm, but before that at 10:00 pm an announcement would come over the airwaves. With a voice saying its 10:00 clock pm, do you know where your kids are? Too bad they do not do this anymore, everyone is busy doing their own thing no one is hold responsible.

I encourage anyone who is reading this book if you have family cherish them spend as much time as you can with them, my father died 2001. (May he rest in peace), because life is so short one minute you are here and the next you are not. My mother also pasted away, she pasted in 2008 New Years Eve the year of 2009 was approaching she did not make it to see it.

I would not be there for her because of my incarceration, but we stayed in touch with each other and she prepared me for her departure.

You know when you are young how you never wanted to be around your siblings or your mother and father or when it was, time to go on a family outing, you all ways tried to get out of it. I would think twice about that and spend as much time as possible with them.

Family (sociology), basic social group united through bonds of kinship or marriage, present in all societies

Ideally, the family provides its members with protection, companionship, security, and socialization.

The structure of the family and the needs that the family fulfills vary from society to society. The nuclear family—two adults and their children—is the main unit in some societies.

In others, it is a subordinate part of an extended family, which also consists of grandparents and other relatives. A third family unit is the single-parent family, in which children live with an unmarried, divorced, or widowed. Always cherish your families.

No matter who you consider to be your family, show them you love them, express to them how you feel, try to spend as much time as you can with them.

Around the world, families take many different forms and serve different functions. Common functions of the family are to provide emotional support for family members and to nurtured children to adulthood.
My Adolescence Stages

The state or process of growing up the period of life from puberty to maturity
When I started school teachers were, allow to whip the students once they got out of line.
Back then, they would put you in a corner with a dunce cap on your head. Now I am nowhere near the smartest person in the world. However, don’t you think putting a dunce cap on a child was a little bit too much? The dunce cap a conical cap sometimes marked with the letter D formerly used as a punishment for slow learners at school the word dunce means, check this out now, it means a dull-witted and stupid person. My personal opinion, this was humiliating to the students and the parents,
What kind of damage do you think happens to a child who has to wear this cap at school? In addition, everyone is making fun of him. Now this never happened to me thank God. Nevertheless, can you imagine the psychological damage this was doing to the kids? When you have time look up the word conical cap, break the word down all the way to its root, and get understanding of what was going on here.

Main Entry: conical
Resembling a cone: having the shape of a cone *conical
See ROOT illustration
Conically adverb
Conicalness
Now when you take the word Conicalness, break it into syllables, and look up the syllable cal it means cal
Pronunciation:*kal Function: noun
Inflected Form:-s
Etymology: probably from O Cornish cal cunning, sly, from Latin callidus, from its presence in tin ore, considered by the miners an impish intrusion of a worthless substance.
To divest of human qualities or personality: make machine like *dehumanizing the masses into unthinking conformity*: make impersonal or unconcerned with human values an abstract, dehumanized
(Divest): to dispossess or deprive especially of possessions, qualities, rights *compelled to divest himself of his holdings*
To lay aside: ABANDON to take away (possessions or vested rights): synonyms see STRIP.
I’m going to stop here because I always let my opinion get in the way, I like breaking things down and getting to the root of it, thanks to this guy I met alone my journey being incarcerated he was always encouraging me to get understanding of the words that are being use around me stop being ignorant. That is what led the Marjory of us to prison, by (ignorance) not knowing.
Back to the story
Once I graduated from elementary, it was time for middle school the six grades, my school name was Henry Ford Middle school. I never like school that much because of the expectations my teachers had for me.
My sisters were honor students therefore everyone expected me to be as well, but I am afraid to tell you I was know where near being an honor student.
I had the same teachers they had, every time I would get a bad grade my teachers would say why you are not like your sisters, this use to burn me up. Nevertheless, I must say one of my teachers persuaded me, to challenge myself and her name was Mrs. Thomas. Now Mrs. Thomas live right around the corner from us, and every now and then she would come by the house and talk with my parents so I now had to be on my best behavior are she would tell my parents.
Michael's Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Around this time, my father was driving trucks long distance and my mother was a nurse, and my older sister Claudette was doing her own thing hanging out with her friends, my sister Kathryn tried to monitor me but she was into everything there was at her school, she was an honor student.

She was president of the year book club, and she was also on the track team, oh and she was a cheerleader.

By now, I am realizing that I am being neglected at home. Therefore, I started acting out being rebellion. You remember I told you everyone hung out at our house. Well, before school our house was the meeting place, I was the last one to leave in the morning, therefore I and my friends would have all kinds of fun, before school sometimes we would turn up the stereo real loud.

Around this time our family was doing well to my knowledge I was dressing quite well at a young age I was wearing silk underwear, my clothes were nice, my father made sure that I was fresh and clean, he gave me a diamond ring, and I had a nice chain around my neck. I always had nice shoes, at one time, I was call to the principle office, and the principle wanted to know what my parents did for a living.

I can recall one of the teachers asking me was my parents’ drug dealers; I was told not to come back to school until they met with my parents. How crazy was that “uh?

Unfortunately, my mother had to take off from work to bring me back to school; my principle finally has to meet at least one of my parents. And I must say my mother told him a thing are two, my mother explain that all her kids dress nice and they work hard to provide to give us nice clothes to wear, And the reason my father could not make it because he was on the road working.

I also was caught smoking weed behind the gym at school by Coach Lee, I was suspended, and could not return to school for like three weeks. I remember Mr. Mackenzie escorted me into his office. He was our principle, we called him no eyebrows because he had no eyebrows, now Mr. Mackenzie tried to get in touch with my parents but he had no luck, I knew my father was out of town and my mother was at work and no way, he was going to get in touch with her at the hospital.

When my mother finally founded out about what I had done she was upset with me and she was fed up to the point that she had talk with her sister, My Aunt Dee about me going to move in with her and my Uncle Bill. The conversation was about me going to school in Chattanooga, Tennessee. I was excited about this until my aunt told me all her rules and regulations. I got scared and change my mind, and then I got threatens with boarding school.

Pupils are boarded and lodged as well as taught in this school. Therefore, I kind of settle down a little bit, but I was rough on my teachers. I had one teacher her name was Mrs. Snyder. I was so mean to her, it was not funny I use to make this women cry in the classroom. In addition, she still gave me a passing grade, bless her heart.

Now you remember I told you my father was in the Korean War he was a tank commander. When he got out the military, he graduated from Dillard Business College. Moreover, later he became an insurance man he would take me to work with him, on my days off from school.

I notice we were going in many women homes, I was so young at the time now I realize some of the women my father was having flings with, because they would leave me in the living area while they go off in the bedroom for a while. I did not know this until I got much older.

My father stop working for the insurance company, and later he was to become a Louisiana state trooper. Only for a short period, after my father past the test, we were afraid because around this time police officers was getting murder quite a bit.

Therefore, we pretty much talked him out of that occupation that is when he became a truck driver. (That was the worst mistake of our life that we agreed on).

When my father became a truck driver, I became consume with everything that I got my hands on. I joined the band at school. Because I did not want to dress out for gym class, so when I return home and delivered the news too my family that I had joined the school band, they encourage me to go for it, but to make sure I go through with it. I wanted to play the drums, but all those spots were taken so I decided to play the saxophone.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

My father brought me a beautiful saxophone I was so happy. Every day when I came home from school, I would try out my new horn. I finally realize that I could not play this instrument, it was just too hard for me, so I had to tell my father that I had felled at trying to play the saxophone.

To my surprise my parents was not upset. I asked could I try out the trumpet, so my father return the sax, and replaced it with the trumpet, this became my instrument, I became the second horn in our band, I was on the second row for all events, concerts and parades. To be honest with you our school band suck.

For a long period, we played music like sweet Caroline, and some more boring music that I cannot recall but I do know it was not what we wanted to play.

Eventually we talked our band teacher into letting us play some popular music and to allow us to create our own marching steps, he was all for it, before you know it we were getting good.

I really enjoyed playing my trumpet. To the point, my friends and me started a band, my friend David played the drums he had a nine piece drum set, my friend Bennie play the xylophone, of course I played the trumpet, Kevin played the guitar. Now do not get it twisted, all we were doing was making noise.

We would practice at each other house in the garage on some weekends. One of my oldest friends his name was Rodger he and his friends had a real band, I would go watch them play in his parents garage they were actually playing real music, he started teaching me how to play the lead guitar.

I felted in love with the lead guitar; I got good at playing it, so I thought. Now Rodger live about four houses from me, he took a likening to me, he was teaching me how to ride his motorcycle, I was short so he was really holding it up, but I was going through the gears learning the fundamentals of riding. He taught me how to fight, I guess because he did not have anyone at home with him, but his older brother. I guess He looked at me like a little brother because I did not have any brothers.

I really appreciated how he looked out for me. I remember one time we were riding in another neighborhood and this rival crew tried to jump me. However, Rodger would not let it go down; one of the people from the rival gang said he would go get his older brother, if Rodger mess with him or try to interfere with what they were getting ready to do to me. In addition, that was to jump me. Rodger told him to go and get him that, he would kick his ass too.

Now Rodger could fight, I told you he was teaching me how to fight. We use to fight! We fought all the time coming up. I came really close to becoming a boxer, my neighbor Mr. Ball was a boxing fanatic he took us to the gym all the time to watch boxing matches with kids our ages and I was really interested in it but I don’t know what happen alone the way with that.

I will try and get back to some of the fighting later I must continue with the story now but if I don’t get back to the fighting please forgive me, where was I?

Oh I loved the guitar so much I talked my father into buying me one, one evening the whole family went shopping I can’t recall the department store, I want to say Wilson department store but I am not sure, I remember while in the store I spotted a beautiful Gibson guitar I immediately inform my parents what I wanted.

I got so excited; I had everyone attention in the store. My sisters were so embarrass. That is what they told me later. Anyway, every one of my family members walked over to where the instruments were and my father looked at it and told me one day that he would purchase one for me.

Right at that moment, I hit the floor and started yelling from the top of my lungs. My sisters took out in another direction they acted like they didn’t know me, my mother was stung she was just looking at me like I was possessed are something, by now I am crying up a storm everyone is looking they are thinking that my father is killing me. My father finally calms me down and thirty minutes later, we are walking out the department store with an electric guitar and amplifier.

Now while in the car my father was so angry he was threatening to whip me as soon as we get home. This was one whipping I was willing to take, because I got what I wanted.

I know you are probably saying if that was you and your child you would have beat his butt right there in the store, I know, if it was one of my kids I would have beat their butt as well.
I really did not have any intentions on doing what I did, it was not planed; it was just a spur of the moment thing. By the time we got home, it was dark outside.

I do not recall me getting a whipping, because I never forgotten a beating from my father, so I will have to say I was spared this time. I was not spared a lot. This time I was.

My father was on the road a lot, but he all ways came home and when he did I was all ways happy to see him, we would see this big eighteen wheeler coming through the neighborhood and my friends would be yielding here comes your dad.

Every time my father would come home, he would tell me to get his bag out of the truck, now this was a big leather bag that he kept all his change in for the tolls and miscellaneous usage. Moreover, mind you my father would cumulate all this change in a three month span or sometimes even longer and he would ask me to count it up, once I have counted it all, I will tell him the total. The total would be in the hundreds sometimes. All my father would tell me to do is leave him about ten dollars for the toll when he leaves out again. This went on for as long as I can remember.

Now my father gave me every thing I wanted. However, he did not play I caught my share of beatings from my father.

If you remember in chapter one I told you my mother never whip me a day in her life. That is right she never did.

Now as I said my father was a different story I remember my father beating me for being dirty.

Now I am thinking This what boys do get dirty outside playing, it was one evening, I was next door playing with Kevin and David in their garage, now their father work at Big Ten tire company, and they had all kinds of tires in their garage Kevin use to work on them for his dad.

Kevin drop out of school and started working for his dad while Kevin is working. David and I are playing around with the tires. I know it was getting late so I decided to go home, it was just next door.

Before I could get in the door, my father was turning the corner in his car, he spotted me, and I was filthy. He started yelling at me to get indoors and strip to take those dirty clothes off that’s all he kept saying was strip, once I had gotten out of all my clothes he told me to get in the shower, I did what I was told, when I got out I was met with a belt.

My father beat me so bad. On top of that, I was Butt naked.

I was still wet when he started hitting me he put all kind of marks on me. He told me he was going to leave a mark on me that I would remember for the rest of my life. The mark is still there to this day, on my inner thigh.

I was humiliated my friends were peeping through the window and laughing at me. When I got off punishment, they teased me for quite a while, I was so embarrass it was not funny at all.

My father just did not play when I got out of line, too this day I do not remember my father every beating my sisters, maybe they never got into trouble.

There was another time that I will never forget I and Kevin and David my neighbors, were with their parents grocery shopping while they were buying groceries we went off to T,G,& Y. Now this was a five and dime store where kids lost their minds whenever they would go there, they had all sorts of toys.

We roamed around the store until we founded what we wanted. Marbles nice shiny cat eyes, we had to have them I fumbled with the bag that the marbles were in until I got the particular one that I had to have.

we all put the cat eyes in our pockets and headed for the door when we got out of the door the managers was waiting on us they would not let us go anywhere. They ask us who are we with, an about this time Mr. and Mrs. Ball.

Kevin and David parents were coming out of the Winn-Dixie, they spotted us with these grown Caucasian men ,by this time, Kevin had identified that his parents were right there approaching us. They wanted to know what was going on. Why were we with these men?

I remember the managers telling them that we had stolen some marbles out of his store and that if they were not paid for he was going to call the police. Mrs. Ball had a long discussion with them then she told us to get in the car. On the way home, she was telling us how disappointed she was with us.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Now to my surprise Mrs. Ball said she was going to tell my parents ‘I really didn’t think she would she was a really nice lady she died of asthma about three years later. (Back to the story):

I was not too worried, about Mrs. Ball telling, because I know my mother would just fuss at me. I can handle that, my father was on the road. At least I thought he was, when we pull in the subdivision and turned on our street there it was my father big eighteen-wheeler. My heart felted like it stopped, now I am nervous. We pull in my neighbor’s driveway got out of the car Mrs. Ball told me to come with her I did. We went inside my house Mrs. Ball was telling my parents what I had done and asking them not to whip me because boys will be boys. I heard my father saying I am not going to whip him, thank you for informing us. I promise I am not going to whip him.

My sisters had all their friends over at the house. We had a house full of girls! Note; girls were just starting to peek my curiosity. Therefore, I was a little bit uncomfortable.

My father told my sisters to take their friends outside after Mrs. Ball left to go home. After the house was cleared out, my father did not yell or fuss, all he did was tell me to follow him to the kitchen. I am thinking he is going to fix me something to eat he said that he was not going to whip me, and guess what he did not.

What was lying ahead would be a day I will never ever forget. My father cut the stove on, we had a gas stove at the time, the eyes of the stove lit up with flames, and I am still thinking he is getting ready to cook for us.

Then all of a sudden, he grabs my hands and put them in the fire. I am hollering like it’s no tomorrow.

Now my father was six four a big man, do not forget I am a little kid. I could not get a way to save my life, my father is yelling at me so you are a thief uh. No son of mine will be stilling! When I get finish with you! You want pick up anything else that is not yours! He was right, something could be on the ground with nobody around I will in no way pick it up! I had blisters on my hands for two weeks; I had to walk around with an ice pack in my hands.

Today that would have gotten my father time in prison for child abuse. On top of him burning my hands I was being punish for two weeks I could not go outside. Those were just some of the beating I took growing up, after the beatings.

My father started taking me with him; I learned some valuable lesson from all the beating. I never resented my father for what he did to me; he was trying to save my life. He was trying to help me correct the wrong things I was doing in life because if the wrong people were to catch us stilling they would kill us or hide us for a very long time. He would also teach me how to survive in this world. He would show me how to interact with different types of people. He would also show me how to work on cars, also how to cook; how to hunt, and how to shoot a gun. My dad use to spy on me sometimes. I can recall one time me and my friends were outside playing.

Some people from another rival street came on our street picking on us, and I and this person name Darrell got into a fight, I bloody his nose right quick and the fight was over.

I turn around towards my house and my father was sitting on the car looking the whole while. He called me over, gave me a dollar, and said to me good job son now go inside and get ready for bed.

I felt so good I made my father proud of me that night. The next morning we got up early and my father started building me a go-cart it was a nice one too, I had the best looking homemade go-car in the neighborhood.

My father told me he would eventually put an engine on it, he never got around to it, but I still enjoyed it. One day when I was arriving home from school on the bus I notice in my driveway a lot of the older kids who went to high school was at my house playing basketball.

My father had bought a basketball goal with net and backboard with ball for me and he was letting the kids play basketball while I was at school. When I got off the bus everyone, acknowledge me, and was saying look what your dad did for you. I thought that was cool.

Every time that the Harlem Globetrotters would come to town, my father and I would go to see them. I can recall this one time at Loyola University it was halftime my father told me to come with him. We went
towards the locker rooms, and there he was waiting for us, Meadow Lark Lemon, now come to my surprise, him and my father were buddies, they met in Korea, my father introduce me to all of them, it was Curly Neal who gave me his basketball. Everyone signed my ball that day that was one of the best of times, but before we got home, someone had stolen the ball out of the car.

I had a neighbor that live three houses from us his name was Mr. Nat now he work in advertising for a beer company. He would always have all kind of poster and beer paraphernalia in his car. He even drove a car with the company logo on it, every time you seen his car you would think beer I guess that was the whole point uh?

Anyway Mr. Nat had a horse ranch that was located on the river road about five miles out, he would always ask me and Bennie, you remember Bennie he is another one of my best friends, they use to call us the three amigos it was I Bennie, and Reginald.

Anyway, back to the story Mr. Nat would take us with him to feed his horses and he would let us ride them, we were having the time of our lives on some weekends we would clean the sables out then take the horses out.

Then one day it happen I spotted the most beautiful Shetland pony I had ever seen. I had to have him, when we were finish for the day I couldn’t wait to ask my father could I have a pony, he told me he would think about it, he later through up question like where would you keep him? How would you take care of him?

Now all these were good legitimate question that need to be answer, so my father said he would get back with me and he would give it some thought, time went on I kept pressing, he got tired of me asking so he told me to stop worrying him about it before he get upset. I never asked him again. As time went on one day, I came home from school and to my surprise this was the ultimate gift from my father yet waiting for me, was a brand new Honda seventy motorcycle.

The color was red and black only one other kid had one in the neighborhood and his name was Keith now Keith bike was green we became arch rivals, after I got my bike everyone started getting motorcycles my friend Reginald his parents bought him and his brother, Honda one hundreds one for each of them.

Thanks to Rodger, I already knew how to ride, I just had problems releasing the clutch, as time went on I got good at it, I was short for a long time I didn’t start growing until my late teens. Therefore, it was difficult for a while to ride by myself; I always needed someone big on the back to hold the bike up when I stop.

I started hanging with this older kid his name was Robert. Now we called him spuddy do not ask why I do not know to this day, why we called him that. Anyway spuddy was one of those guys were was known as a trouble maker he stayed in and out of prison, for stilling cars, breaking in people houses.

He stayed across the street from us he never pick on me, I guess because I always treated him nice, him and his family everyone use to tease them, because they didn’t have too much and they were like country as all out doors. Besides everyone feared my father in the neighborhood. They knew my father and my sisters would come and see about them.

Now Spuddy new everything about cars and motorcycles he was teaching me everything. He showed me how to pop wheelies and everything. You remember I told you about Keith, well Keith call me out, he was telling everybody at school that his bike was faster than mine so after school we were to meet on the backstreet now this street had nothing on it.

It was perfect for racing, now I had no other choice everybody would have thought I was scared, you know I could not have that. That would ruin a kid reputation.

You know that is how we use to think. So anyway, it was time to race now, we always race a quarter of a mile, you see we all grew up loving the racetrack NHRA. I use to go to southland drag strip, with my uncles and cousins whenever we were in the country.

I will try and share some of those experiences with you along the way, but forgive me if I don’t back to the race, everyone from school was there, this girl that I like was even there, you remember I told you I
Michael’s Life Time Memories  

By Michael Brown

was not interested in girls they were just peeking my curiosity. Well anyway, her name was Phyllis, Phyllis Batiste the most beautiful girl in the world, I was thinking back then, so you know I had to get my shine on.

When spuddy dropped the flag to go, Keith took off as if I was just sitting there. I got off the clutch as if I was taking a Sunday drive. I lost the race I felt so bad, spuddy yelling at me, telling me. I told you how to race you have to give it all the gas and then pop the clutch! Stop being scared! That is all it took I told Keith lets race again.

This time we raced for each other’s lunch money for a week I let him talk me into this, I never ever betted on anything before in my life, you know how it go, I just couldn’t let him punk me so of course I agree to the stupid bet.

This time was going to be different; when the flag drop I accelerated got off the clutch the front tire came off the ground, I got down on the handlebars under the wind; my helmet flew off my head.

I did not stop, next thing you know I was crossing the finish line everyone was cheering for me. All but one person his name was Samson, now Samson was the older brother to Darrell, you remember Darrell and me had the fight and I bloody his nose? Well Samson is Darrel older brother, he was yelling, and walking towards me with my helmet in his hand talking all loud saying, your dad is going to beat your butt look what you have done to your helmet.

It was all chipped up now my helmet was a metallic blue and it looks as if it had felt from a building or something. Of course, I won the race.

From then on, everyone was praising me. I started practicing every day we had an obstacle course where you can ride all day.

I started going there every chance I would get; my dad sometimes would take me riding. We would go on the highway riding in traffic, one time he got on the back and told me to take him across the river, I thought he was kidding, but he was not

To get across the river we had a big tall bridge that is call the Huey P Long Bridge, it was name after the governor of Louisiana. He was known as “Kingfish.”

This bridge is so scary it has two lanes, two going west, and two going east. Now in the middle of the lanes separating them are train tracks. This is the longest railroad bridge in the country that goes over water. While you are on this bridge driving, trains are on the bridge at the same time. The bridge would rock, I mean it would sway back and forward, very scary and you are so high in the sky, and on top of that, this bridge have curves and you are over the muddy Mississippi River.

As we proceeded to go over this bridge my father grab the handlebars and gave the bike all it had to get us up this steep climb cars were pasting us.

Remember now my bike was a Honda seventy I think the bike went about sixty-two miles an hour tops, it was a strain on the bike with I and my father, we still made it to our destination.

This was another one of my father girl friends houses. Her name was Geraldine she had two sons, I remember this woman from somewhere, I finally remember she was one of the women on my father insurance route.

I would see more of them as time goes on; “Mrs. Geraldine.” It was getting dark now it was getting late I and Geraldine sons was playing in the cemetery when my father finally said lets go son it was time for the long ride back home.

I am tired its nighttime and we are on this little ass motorcycle I could not wait to get home, I started getting in trouble with the police, they would stop me, for riding without a license, and I was too young to get my license at the time.

I got stop one time too many, I received a ticket and had to appear in court my dad was out of town so my mother took me to courthouse. The judge ask my mother do she have anything to say and my mother told the judge that it will never happen again and that she was going to get rid of my bike. She never did.

I eventually was caught again riding with no license, I had to go back to court the same judge. My mother was so mad at me because she had told this judge that this would not happen again, that she was going to get rid of my bike.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

The judge got so angry when he seen us. He told my mother what the fine was and if I ever come back to his courthouse, again he would lock me up. From then on, I was restricted from riding.

My father whenever he was home he would take me to Audubon Park to ride and then, we would go to the Mississippi River walking on logs in this river. I would have this big pole in my hands walking on these logs with my father he said he was teaching me balance.

These were just some of the things my father and I would do together. There are much more of exciting things he did with me. My father use to come home from work with candy and toys and sometimes he would bring us to Burger King I always loved the whaler my sisters were getting the whopper they use to be so huge.

Speaking of food, I can recall some days when we were eating hotdogs I would get so mad and start crying because my hotdog would always slide out of the bum, I stopped eating hotdogs for a long time and when I started eating them again it was with a folk.

I had a bad temper when things would not go my way I would tear up things I do not know where I got that from.

We ran into some rough times of course around 1974 my oldest sister Claudette joined the navy, and she was greatly miss, I cried my heart out when my sister left me, you see I was young I didn’t understand why my sister wanted to leave us.

Now around this time my father was not coming home as regular, you have heard of all the stories about truck drivers, well my father started coming home every now and then, and I blamed myself for that for a long time.

You recall my father took me everywhere. He also was taking me to his other women houses. I really did not understand this being a young kid; I guess he allowed me to be with him because I did not know what was going on.

Doing one of our outings we were at this lady house and my father introduce me to this little boy, my father said that this is your brother his name is David, I gaze upon this little boy, and what I seen was this little kid who looks just like me, but a smaller version of me.

I was very excited because I had always wanted a little brother to play with. I did not understand the consequences of what was getting ready to become of my father actions with introducing me to this kid that was my brother.

When my father and I return home that evening, I was still on a cloud of just knowing that I now have a brother. I remember the day like it was yesterday, my family and I were getting ready to eat dinner, we were gather around the dinner table having small talk when out of know where, me and my big mouth, I stated to everyone, “guess what yawl? I got a little brother and his name is David.”

You should have seen their faces that day in our home, I thought everyone would be happy with the news, my father looked at me as if I had lost my mind, and my sisters had this strange look on their faces everyone was like what did you just say? I said I got a little brother.

Next thing my father and mother was in their room arguing, next thing my father went storming out of the house. Now my sisters and I were still sitting at the table in a Trans watching what was transpiring in front of us. This was the first time I had witness my parents arguing like this, out of know where a gun blast went off right outside our front door, everyone ran to the door to see what had happened.

My father had shot off a round in his gun, then got in his car and drove off. I recall me and my sisters going visit with him and taking pictures together with our new baby brother, I wonder now how my Mother must have felt about that situation.

After that, I notice my father was not coming home that much, now it was like once every six months, and he was not providing financially any more.

By my father not providing for the household financially as he once did there were plenty of hard times that we would face, by Claudette not being there, it was I and Kathryn and my mother, now my mother started working sixteen hour shifts at the hospital to make ends me.
Michael's Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

My mother did not like driving that much. She would opt out for the bus so she would catch the greyhound bus, my mother was scared to drive over this bridge for a long time so by her riding the bus she had to stay over because of the scheduling, so she would stay away and work double shifts.

You recall how I described this bridge in the last chapter that is why my mother was riding the bus.

My mother was spending all her time at work it would be just Kathryn and me and I did not understand that Kathryn was positioning herself for her future, by me being so young I did not see the significance in anything.

My sister was busy with school and all of her after school activities. In addition, she still made sure I had something to eat, even if it was just mayonnaise and ketchup sandwiches. Times had really gotten hard for us at one point I can recall Kathryn and I searching all over the house to find loose change, onetime we found a dollar worth of change and then we walked about a mile to the store to get a can of spaghetti.

We had many days that we were hungry some days my mother went without eating so that Kathryn and I would have something to eat.

All of this was because of my father’s actions and for a long time I had blamed myself for this, I thought that it was my fault for telling everyone that we had a new edition to the family.

What would affect me the most was, I did not have anyone to supervise me other then Kathryn, now Kathryn was very protective of me bless her heart she have always been like a mother to me our whole life.

I thank God for Kathryn; she was always there for me. I can recall we would not have anything for Christmas and Kathryn would sew or crochet something for me to make sure I would have something under the Christmas tree. These were some of the hardships we faced that shape my life by my father actions everything went from sugar to shit for quite a while.

Times got so hard I am to embarrass to talk about them to this day. Eventually Kathryn left the nest as well she joined the army, now it was just me and my mother, Kathryn remembered the state we were in when she left home, I think she felt bad for leaving me to be on my own, but she did what was best for her.

Do you know this girl? My sister was sending me an allotment for two hundred dollars every month for a long time. Now do you understand the kind of sisters I have. Simply angels, Kathryn knew I was going to have some hard times ahead of me and she did what she thought would ease the burden and it did. However, I also think this is when I took to the streets and started my criminal activities, after Kathryn left I did not have anyone to answer too. “Back to the story”

I didn’t know what my mother was going through at the time but one can only imagine all these good years we had as a family then all of a sudden in an instance everything just start to fall apart.

I felt bad for my mother, my mother after a while got angry. Not at us, but at my father she told him to never come back home. Because he just would not do right, once every blue moon my father would mail my mother a check, it would help us out a great deal it was always when we needed it the most. I blame myself for my family separating because of my big mouth, after I got older; I started exploring the whole scenario in my head over and over again, and I came to the conclusion that my mother probably all ready knew about my father being a whore.

However, when we found out about it, and everyone else started to find out the situation, it was just too much for her to handle. Around this time I was starting to experiment with cigarettes, you see I had already had gotten caught smoking before.

My father he walked up on me on side of the house smoking one of his cigarettes and he made me eat the whole pack, filters an all. This was the gateway, from cigarettes to everything else after that, because after that, I sure started smoking.

I do not know if by eating the cigarettes the nicotine had played a part in me smoking.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

I had to be twelve when I got caught, by the time I was fourteen I was smoking, me and my friends, then I had a friend who use to take his older brother marijuana and sell it to us, we would give him thirty five cents for a match box full.

Now when I said thirty-five cents that is what I mean, a quarter and two nickels. my friends and I knew better about the prices but Calvin did not know any better and we sure was not going to tell him any different now Calvin was a couple of years younger than us and he was very naïve and we played on his ignorance of not knowing.

We were into rock and roll, that’s all we were listening to at that period of time, I also started taking the family car you see right before my father left us he had brought a brand new mercury Montego 1973.

The car was just sitting in the garage; my dad gave me a key to the car why? I do not know why. I guess he knew I would figure it out, I could not drive, I had an idea how to drive because we use to come from our family outings and my dad would put me on his lap.

You couldn’t tell me anything my dad had a convertible red mustang at one time and we would drive over that scary bridge, the one my mother was all ways scared to drive over and my sisters would be so afraid and I would smile all the way home thinking that I am actually driving.

My father gave the mustang to my uncle Henry why I do not know but he gave it to him. My father also had a Buick Rivera that were stolen and was never to be recovered.

Now did my father start to just down. size? Was this because he was planning for his exit to leave the family? I do not know. As I got older, these were some of the things I would explore in my mind.

Eventually I started taking the Montego it was just sitting there. That is how I started driving. Every day I would come home from school, get in the car, and drive around the neighborhood, since my mother didn’t want to drive she took me to the drivers licenses office and I was able to get my licenses to drive her around.

I would drive my mother over that scary bridge; eventually I would talk my mother into letting me teach her how to conquer this monster of a bridge.

Everyone was very comfortable with my driving I must say I am an outstanding driver maybe because I started at a young age, and I have traveled and drove on so many highways and byways.

I would be very patient with my mother. I would talk her through it. It was really just building her confidence up getting her to stop looking in the review mirror at what was coming up behind her. Moreover, for her to just focus on staying in her lane and getting to the other side and do not look down at all that water.

Soon my mother was driving herself to work, but she still on a lot of occasions wanted me to drive her places and I would.

I am not too sure about the time frame I will say 1977 my oldest sister Claudette call home and told us that she had gotten married, I remember being on the road with my father, now just because my father was not living with us on a regular basis I would still see him whenever I wanted too. One summer we were in Orlando Florida and this was where Claudette and her husband were station so we decided to pay them a visit and meet this fellow who so call taking our baby from us.

We search all afternoon for the house we could not find it we thank she gave us the wrong information; I think she did not want my father to come there and embarrass her. That was just my opinion; I do not recall what we did after that but as time went on Claudette call my mother and told her that she had a baby, and wanted to know would it be okay for her to send her husband and her child to stay with us for a while.

Of course being the beautiful person my mother was she did not see a problem with them living with us. This is my mother’s first born you know she would be there for her and all of us for that matter.

When Gregory finally arrived in my life it would never be the same ever again, now don’t go to jumping into conclusions don’t get me wrong I don’t blame anyone on how my life turn out, but I must say he played a major part in shaping and molding my mind at the time. Because of the resources, he had. In addition, he had all the things or should I say we were interested in the same things.
Michael's Life Time Memories  By Michael Brown

Greg really became my best friend everyone thought I and Greg were brothers we were always together with my nephew my nephew name is Lamond you will hear more about him later, now Greg was a good parent. He had an orange and black Datsun four speed B210 he would allow me to use it whenever I wanted.

I would like to share another story with you before I begin to continue with my escapade with Greg we will pick up with Greg in chapter six.

My father came home again; this was doing the time everyone was into muscle cars. All the big kids had them my friend Reginald had a 64 Mustang and his dad had bought him a 69 Chevell he had it prime gray four speed on the floor Bennie had a 73 Skylark his parents gave him, he put sixties on the back.

His car was green now, I had more friends with all kind of cars but these was my closest friends, you recall thses or my best friends part of my crew.

We were starting high school, I remember one of my neighborhood friends name Pettis he use to hang with a couple of my other friends you will hear about in later chapters.

Now Pettis was a hot head but a good kid he was my sister Kathryn age he would always tell me when I get to West Jefferson high school if anybody messes with me tell them that I am from Kennedy Heights and then they want mess with you because they had everyone scared of them. Pettis would get shot by the New Orleans police and die.

You remember the record, I am eighteen with a bullet. Well this was doing that time period when this happen, on the way to the hospital he die, and he was eighteen years old, the whole neighborhood went to his funeral, that incident affected me as well, Pettis was the oldest in his family he left behind two sisters that would enter into my life as well, keep reading.

Like I stated before all of us had cars in school and we had jobs or summer jobs while in school and we would go on the road sometimes with my father. I would always ask my father could Reginald come with us to Pensacola. We would also go to Miami together and Fort Lauderdale as well.

Reginald started going on the road with my father whenever he was in town after I went in the military. Now I, Reginald, Bennie, and Keith, now Keith was another one of my close friends he had a 1969 white and black Camaro 4 speed we all use to hang out at Bennie’s job.

Bennie was working at Popeye's he would call us and tell us to come on thru, so we would all load up in the cars, it took two and sometimes three cars for the whole crew to fit.

We had about a twenty minute ride to Terry Town this is located in the Greater New Orleans area on the west bank of the Mississippi River before we would get there everybody would chip in on some weed and drink.

Now Reginald cousin had the big bags of weed for ten dollars four finger bags, we had to go on the other side of the expressway to Algiers not far from the fisher projects to purchase the product once we got what we wanted we were on our way to Popeye’s’.

We will be twisting the weed all the way, their getting it ready for Bennie because we know he is ready to smoke.

By the time, we get there in the parking lot police comes from everywhere yelling and hollering on the ground! On the ground! We did not know what was going.

They put all of us in hand cuffs and started searching our automobiles they find the weed and pour it out on the ground and one of the cops made us all eat some of the weed. Now Bennie comes out of his establishment to see what is going on, the police handcuff him, and they are telling us that we are all under a rest for arm robbery.

We were unhanded cuffed and told to follow them to the police precinct for questioning, we had no other choice but to comply, we really thought they were up to something but what choice did we have but to follow them, and that’s when we got to the station they put us in a line up.

We would find out later that we had fit the description of the alleged assailant. They finally let us go; we were blown away after that, so we decided to put our money together again to get another bag of weed.

Therefore, once we got our money together we told everybody else to split up, we will meet at Popeye’s, and Bennie had to get back and let his supervisor know what was going on.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Reginald and I went back to his cousin house and purchased another bag of weed from his cousin, he wanted to know what had happen to the first one he gave us.

Therefore, we told him the scoop and then he asked us if we would be careful and of course, we would tell him yes, and we would be on our way around this time we are getting hungry.

We get back to Popeye’s where all the crews is waiting, when we approached the table they had everything that was on the menu on our table, chicken, corn on the cob, dirty rice, beans, French fries, we had the works.

After we finish eating and laughing at how the night had play out we would head back to the neighborhood soon as Bennie shift would be over this was a ritual of ours that we did for quite a while.

Upon us leaving and returning to our turf, we all got back in the cars. Followed one another to the neighborhood once we got back in our hood, we decided to stop at the store and get some beer and more papers to roll up some more weed, soon as we pull in the store here we go again police every where this time we hide the weed before they got to us

They search us down. We told them what had just happen to us earlier.

One of the officers went to his car and got on his radio and, when he came back, he told us that we were free to go.

That was a crazy night it was time to go home, we all went to Reginald house where we would go many nights his parents would be in their room and allow us to be there long as we are not too loud.

We would watch TV or listen to some music, my friends and I would have some great times together.

There was one time I and Reginald went cruising in his brother 73 cutlass it was sort of a bronze color he had fifties on the back, and eights on the front, with (A’S) appliance rims. It was nighttime, I think we were coming from one of his kinfolk’s houses. Moreover, of course we were loaded as hell. I think we smoked some PCP that night. We got the munchies we stop at Oakwood shopping Mall. They had a McKenzie doughnut shop there and everybody in the city of New Orleans loves these doughnuts. We grew up on them, they are like crispy cream doughnuts that are located in Georgia, I never heard of a crispy cream until I came to Georgia.

Anyway we ordered a dozen of doughnuts and then we proceeded to go back home, we are really wasted we get about ten minutes from home when all of a sudden we hit this car in the back we are at a merging intersection where you suppose to merge into traffic we didn’t see the car in front of us.

we hit this car in the back now we did not damage this other car but the cutlass was wreck pretty bad the front end would need replacing.

We are really tripping now because this is Reginald brothers’ car, and he really did not suppose to be driving the car. The car had been put up because his brother had went in the army and he did not want Reginald to drive it, but Reginald dad would let him drive every now and then.

What Reginald and I did that night. I never told a soul until now. We thought of a master plan after we talked the driver of the car that we hit to not report the accident we went home and told Mr. Bush that we were at Oakwood Mall and when we came out of the store, the car had been hit.

Little did we know that Mr. Bush was not slow by a long shot he told us to get back in the car and that he would follow us to the scene of the crime?

On our way there I and Reginald once again started thinking of another master plan as we approach the mall we were contemplating were to park the car to make it look like it was an accident we both spotted some glass on the ground close to the doughnut shop, so we decided to park their.

Once we parked the car. Mr. Bush asked us to explain what happen. He visualized it and then he call the police, the police came took our statement we got the police report for the insurance company. Mr. Bush would get the car repaired. Moreover, it looked as if it never had been hit. Those were just some of the adventures I would have growing up.

I was tired or driving the Montego and I wanted my own car that I could fix up.
I had asked my father would he buy me a car and he told me to pick out one and if the price were reasonable, he would buy it for me whenever he get back in town. I had my mind set on this one car, it was a white trans am four speed it was nice, unfortunate I did not get that particular car.

The next day when I came home from school my father told me lets go and get your car. When we got there this white hippie dude was talking to my father. My father was giving him some money and the person told me to follow him. When we got to his garage there it was a 1968 all black Camaro pro stock street car I really didn’t have to do anything to the car it came ready, I just needed to put some sounds in it.

Now this car had a 283 two speed power glider, hooker headers, hush thrust mufflers, Mickey Thompson fifty’s on the back the rims was so deep you could put your whole arm in them. The front tires had four-inch cuts on the front. This was a quarter horse. It also had a four eleven Dana rear end gear ratio, the cam in it made the car sounded like it wanted to cut off, when I turn the corner I can be going five miles an hour the tires will turn burning rubber because of the gear ratios.

When I got the keys, my father told me to be careful and that he would see me later at the house. He told me he was going to his club for a while. Oh yeah my father was partners with one of his friends they own the blue oyster that was located in Algiers. Now this was not the only club my father had investments in. He also owns the 911 club in Elizabeth New, Jersey you will hear more about this later.

When I received the keys to my car, my father put a couple of dollars in my pocket and was on his way, I crank up the car and it sound like a racing car.

Tommy the person who we purchased the car from told me he had forgotten to close the headers. He had them crack they were not all the way close so I told him I would be all right. I’ll close them when I get home, this was my first time driving a two speed power glider, man as I’m driving on the highway getting back to the hood everyone is looking a me, some people telling me to hit it let me see what you got in it.

This car was definitely eye candy when I pull in the subdivision people started coming out of their houses to see what was this sounding so good you had to hear how this cam sounded, if you were into cars you would know what I am talking about.

By the time I, pull in my driveway all my friends came up to admire the car, that day was awesome as well. Later on that day, my father finally came home and he was getting ready to go back on the road. Before he left my father gave me a visa-credited card with my name on it. In addition, he also gave me a one eight hundred number and told me to call him anytime that I might need to talk to him and that I am the man of the house now.

My father never came back to the house ever again it had to be some years later and that was just passing through. I was all ways using the number my father gave me. Sometimes when my mother needed some help I would call my father and tell him that we needed some money and he would send it.

I can recall sometimes when I just wanted to get away. I would call my father day or night. And tell him that I wanted to be with him. And he would either tell me that he would becoming this way soon to just hold tight or he would send me a bus ticket and tell me where to meet him and this went on to the day my father died.

You remember I told you I was spoil. Now I am in the tenth grade have my own car. I also have the family car I have a visa card, no supervision no one to tell me what to do. Me and my friends would all meet up at my house in the morning get wasted then drive to school sometimes we would all ride in the same cars and then other times we would take separate cars.

Now I really want you to pay attention to some of the insane things I was doing out of ignorance now it just wasn’t me but the book is about me so I want include my friends but you know they were right there with me. This is how I use to go off to school we would have an ice chest we would get a case of twenty four ounces of Dixie Beer about two half gallons of red label thunder bird and we would always have something good to smoke,

We would go in to the school parking lot hang out before the bell ring for homeroom and someone would ask if anyone had anything of importance on the agenda for the day and the ones who did would stay back and the ones who were free we would take off.

Page 20 of 188
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

I all so remember one day while in homeroom we had a substitute teacher her name was Mrs. Ruby Hill fine as all out doors. She was in her late twenties she became my lover I would skip school and she would have a motel room waiting on me. She would write an excuse for me being absent from school and this went on for a while. She was also having a fling with another one of my good friends.

I all most fell in love with this women she was showing me things that I had no idea of, but when I founded out. You will see just keep reading.

Sometimes we would go to City Park or to the matinees and hang out until it was almost time for school to let out. On the weekends, we would on some Fridays we would go to Daytona Beach, and about this time, I started getting into girls heavy because the car is attracting them it was not I, but I use this to my advantage.

I all so started working this was my first official job. It was with the state department of transportation. I only had two classes so when I got out of school I was working driving a brand new street sweeper. Me and this old Caucasian man his name was Jerry. He was training me to take his place when he retired.

The reason I got a job was to continue to dress up my car. That was the only reason, I remember one day at work Jerry told me that we were required from now on to whenever there was road kill on the side of the roads. That we had to get out of the truck and physically remove the road kill off the streets. That is when I walked off the job being young and dumb I had a good job and because of my ignorance, I blew that opportunity.

I flat out quite my job that day how crazy was that.

Another one of my closest friend his name is Troy now Troy had a firebird it was orange and red he had fifties and cuts with centerlines on his car I think he was running a four hundred engine in it.

Now Troy and I would start hanging out a lot. He didn’t like going to school that much either and he and his brother was pretty much spoil as well, Troy had cousins in the country, all girls about six in one family fine and beautiful we would travel to Opelousas, city in south central Louisiana, seat of Saint Landry Parish, (55 mi) west of Baton Rouge.

The distance we would travel just for the fun of it you see Baton Rouge takes about forty-five minutes to an hour to get there from New Orleans and Opelousas takes almost an hour and forty-five minutes from Baton Rouge, we would leave in the morning just as we were going to school.

I had a fling with one of Troy cousins. It lasted about a year and a half. Her name was Antoinette I was so crazy about this girl after the first time we met we stay in touch with each other. We were always writing each other, and she would come and spend the summer with her cousins just so she can be with me. We were close until I got out of school. Then we went our separate ways.

That was just some of the things we were doing. We were heavy into rock and roll music we started going to all the rock concerts I would only listen to rock music for the whole high school duration.

You can probably name any rock groups from the seventies or eighties and nine times out of ten, I have seen them.

So you see my life growing up was awesome I can go on and on some things I refuse to put in the book but you can get the idea of the reason I am the way I am.

By my family spoiling me I honestly think that it had its advantages and its disadvantages, growing up I was very angry with my parents for not being there for me the way I need them I had all the material things but not the push and motivation I needed.

Once I got older and gain wisdom and was more knowledgeable I understood the blame falls solely on me my mother and father I forgave them of all the mistakes that they or I made to each other, before they died I got a chance to spend some time with my father and I pour out my heart to him. I forgave him for how he treated my mother. My mother all so forgave him and my sisters all so forgave him. My mother died while I have been incarcerated, my mother and I have share so many things together that I want speak of, and she was my all.

I miss her so much she was preparing me for her death for quite a while I still read her letters that she left for me before she passed away.

Page 21 of 188
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

The only function of the family that continues to survive all change is the provision of affection and emotional support by and to all its members, particularly infants and young children.

Specialized institutions now perform many of the other functions that were once performed by the agrarian family: economic production, education, religion, and recreation. Jobs are usually separate from the family group; family members often work in different occupations and in locations away from the home. Education is provided by the state or by private groups. Religious training and recreational activities are available outside the home, although both still have a place in family life. The family is still responsible for the socialization of children. Even in this capacity, however, the influence of peers and of the mass media has assumed a larger role. I pray that anyone who reads my book to please be a good parent to your kids stop neglecting him or her listen to them pay attention.
Growing Up In the Seventies

The many obstacles I would face being a kid growing up in Louisiana unified schools in the sixties and seventies.

Something that stands in the way or opposes something that hinders progress that is what I would call obstacles. Crossing the color lines, was a revelation for me I had never experienced hate until I started going to an integrated school.

You see we were being bus to school in an all white neighborhood, where they did not want us. Us meaning black folks now it was not much of the kids we were in school with, but it was the older kids and the parents of the kids, can you believe that. God forbid's if you would miss the bus.

You see our school set all the way in the back of this white neighborhood, so if you were to miss the school bus, you would have a long walk home.

In addition, on your way home, you probably would be jumped on or you would run for your life. On our way to school everyone would be looking at us while we are passing through their neighborhood on the bus as we are in a parade only they're be hollering obscene language at us.

On Some occasion while we were in class.

The white kids would come in our school throw mottle cocktails bombs, so class would be suspended for that day

In addition, they would wait on us to leave school and try to fight with us. I can recall one time when they made a big black dummy, which looked so real they put a hang noose around his neck and hung it up in the middle of the school with a sign that read kill all niggas.

Now you know this had to be devastating to a kid growing up. I can remember being at school playing basketball next thing, you notice it looks like the whole neighborhood of whites was standing outside the gates calling us all kind of names.

I guess you know eventually we got tired of running. My father got tired of the way we were being treated as well, not only my father but also everyone was getting fed up. All we wanted to do was get an education and for the life of us kids, we could not understand how people could be so evil. I guess you can say this is when I was introduced to hate.

I never experience anything like it before in my life, if you can recall I told you we had nothing in our neighborhood, we had to travel to the white area, for groceries, Winn-Dixie was the closest grocery store for us.

I can remember some of the black family's going buying groceries at Winn-Dixie, and when it was time to go back to their car the tires might be flat or your car would be vandalize in some way or another.

Now the area where we live was the greater New Orleans area located in Jefferson parish. In addition, Sheriff Harry Lee was the chief of police.

Then soon to be, Steven Segal would come to be law enforcement in this area. Yes Steven Segal the actor.

We also had the grand wizard of the Klu Klux Klan. They had their obstacle course about a mile from where we live, where they would camp out and practice shooting and whatever else they did back there it was private property.

I can also recall some of my older friends going to the pool hall one day. You remember I told you, where the pool hall was located.

In the white neighborhood, well while they were in the process of playing pool someone had poured gasoline on their car and set it on fire. By doing this, enough was enough the older kids decided to get some get back.
On top of all this, the series Roots would be seen on television, now we can really see how our people had really been treated for so long it was time for retribution this show affected every black person that watched it we just had to do something.

We felt violated we needed to hurt all white people for everything they had done to us that was our mind set at the time today I am sorry for our actions, but let me get back to the story.

One day while playing outside. The older kids in the neighborhood came around talking. Telling everyone not to worry any more, they said that they were going to handle everything. I am talking about the dropouts, the hoodlums, the gangsters, you name it, they told us to go to school the next day and that they would be there at lunch time and do not say a word to anyone.

Now we were so excited we could not wait until the next day; the following morning we all were up for school after everyone left for school or work in my house whole.

My friends started appearing as usually we all talked about what we were going to do when it pop off.

Now it was time for the school bus to arrive, you could just feel something in the air that day. You just knew something bad was going to happen, when we got on the bus it was confirm that something was going down big.

Now on the bus were people who never ever step foot on our school grounds before.

We had some gangsters on the bus they gave us head nods as we took our seats.

Once we got to school, it was like any other day from the looks of things. But we all knew better, when the bell rang we all went to class the gangsters blended in and was waiting trying to be inconspicuous but some of the teachers knew that they didn’t belong at the school so the teachers called the police and the police made them leave the school yard.

I guess them that road the school bus that morning did not want to miss whatever they thought were going to happen.

Although when it was time for lunch everyone who got ran off the premises’ were back with vengeance they had sticks, big two by fours, chains. Moreover, the entire neighborhood bullies who had talked to us the day before were there.

We had a full-blown riot going on and we were right in the middle of it.

While we were in the cafeteria eating lunch, one of the white kids through a wad of paper into my lunch tray, now I know it was an accident the kid was so apologetic.

However, I could not let it go, too many people was waiting for me to do something and if I did not. It would have diffidently hurt my reputation. Therefore, when we got outside everyone was following me to see what I was going to do. I had to go through with it; I spotted the kid who had through the wad of paper.

I approach him and I was having some words with him he was constantly apologizing, and then out of nowhere I hit him in the jaw and by then everyone started fighting all over the school it was a full fledge war.

By this time, the white kid’s family started arriving. Everyone was running around trying to take cover because if you were white you were in trouble, today was redemption for everything we had to endure. From the many late evening, we had to stay after school for band practice as well.

We was doing this also for all the times While on our way home, we would have to run for our life, yes run for our life!

I hated staying after school for anything, because if you did. You were going to have to run fast as I said before. This school was deep in the neighborhood, an all white neighborhood.

It was about a mile to the highway. Highway 90 and then you would have to dodge the traffic to get across to the other side of the highway.

Now once you got to the other side you still was not safe until you run for at least another quarter of a mile past the fire station where the black section would began we were fighting for all the times they threaten our friends and our love ones and for coming in our neighborhoods trying to scare us.

For calling us all kind of names for no reason. Besides, we did not start it, but we were going to finish it finally. I remember my father wanted me and my friends to stay after school one day, so he can ride behind us in his car.
Michael’s Life Time Memories                By Michael Brown

When they started to come after us, he was going to shoot somebody. I feared for my father because I know my father, he was going to kill somebody that day; I played sick I will never forget it. I played sick all day even after school.

When my father arrived, the teacher told him I was not feeling well so he told us all to get in the car and he drove everyone home. I never told him what I had done and we never talked about it again after that.

If you did not have a car or some form of transportation, you were in trouble. You would have to stand in front of the subdivision and pray that someone would give you a ride.

Hoping they are going in your direction.

We had no public transportation at the time all we had was the greyhound bus that would stop in front of our neighborhood two times a day, six in the morning and six at night give or take, Monday thru Fridays, and one time on Saturday and one time on Sunday.

They would be traveling from Houston Texas or on its way to some other destination.

In addition, you would always try to be home before dark. I can recall one time wakening up and seeing the klan’s marching in our neighborhood late one night.

They had white sheets over their heads one was beating a drum; one was holding a big wooden cross. Can you imagine witnessing something like that growing up? Men in sheets and wearing Masks with pointed hoods, Klan men terrorized Public officials and blacks

This was doing the time we had all came and invaded their space I guess, with the developers building a black neighborhood they weren’t ready to be integrated and they didn’t know what to expect from us, not to make excuses’ for their actions.

Although segregation was abolished by 1968, segregation was still prevalent in most Northern and Southern cities. Blacks tended to live in all-black neighborhoods, often called ghettos.

There were three main reasons for the formation of these neighborhoods. Real estate agents, banks, and city zoning decisions dictated first, housing patterns.

Often real estate agents would not show blacks homes in white neighborhoods while banks often refused to loan money to blacks moving into white neighborhoods.

City planners often kept neighborhoods segregated through decisions on where to locate streets, interstate highways, access ramps to those highways, and even subway and other rail stations.

Second, while formal segregation in schools disappeared, public officials often created school districts designed to keep blacks and whites separated. Finally, suburbanization also increased segregation, as whites increasingly left the cities for suburban communities. In 1968, only two major American cities, Washington and Charleston, had black majorities.

By 1990, more than 15 cities were predominantly black, including Atlanta, Baltimore, Detroit, New Orleans, Newark, and Richmond. Rather than live near blacks, or have their children attend schools with blacks, many whites moved away from the cities.

Economics and access to jobs compounded these race-conscious decisions by individuals and governments. Discrimination in hiring meant that blacks earned less than whites did.

Therefore, they had less money for housing. Thus, even where blacks had access to better housing, in integrated neighborhoods, most could not afford to move there.

In addition, many blacks chose to live in neighborhoods with other blacks, just as whites chose to live with other whites.

Blacks who did integrate neighborhoods in both the North and the South often faced violence and intimidation. The Grand wizard of the Klan, David Duke was elected to the Louisiana House of Representatives in 1989.

Today I am friends with some of the same kids we were fighting with. Because of ignorance! My life and some of the people I grew up with life could have been cut short.

I thank God for seeing us through, and allowing us to understand that we will not tolerate ignorance! The power of urban black voters changed the political landscape and accelerated the pace of civil rights. Prejudice refers to preconceived attitudes or opinions about other people. Prejudices may be favorable or
unfavorable, but the term usually refers to negative attitudes held toward others based solely on their membership in a specific group.

Racism is a form of prejudice based on perceived physical differences and usually refers to unfavorable or hostile attitudes toward people perceived to belong to another race. Racism usually results in a belief in the superiority of one's own race. One cause of prejudice and racism is the human tendency to form stereotypes, generalized beliefs that associate whole groups of people with particular traits.

Racial stereotypes are exaggerated or oversimplified characterizations of the appearance, personality, and behavior of a group of people. For example, at one time or another, certain racial groups have been described as lazy, stupid, athletic, dishonest, violent, or miserly.

Whereas prejudice and racism refer to beliefs or attitudes about people, discrimination refers to actual behavior based on these attitudes. For example, racial discrimination takes place when an African American couple is denied a bank loan for a house that a similarly qualified white couple would have received.

In the United States prior to the 1960s, a lack of federal laws permitted discrimination against black Americans in housing, employment, education, public accommodations, voting, and access to the judicial system. These forms of discrimination led to the civil rights movement in the United States, a movement by black Americans to achieve racial equality.

Today, federal laws and government policies have outlawed most forms of racial discrimination. Some policies are designed to redress the effects of past discrimination. For example, affirmative action programs are designed to favor racial minorities in hiring and promotion, college admissions, and the awarding of government contracts.

Much of human suffering throughout history has resulted directly from racism and racial discrimination.
New Orleans History

First, I would like to give you a little history on the city I was born and raised in.

New Orleans, one of North America's most distinctive and culturally diverse cities, located in southeastern Louisiana on the Mississippi River, about (about 110 mi) from the Gulf of Mexico.

The city was founded in 1718 on a site mostly below sea level on the east bank of the Mississippi and south of Lake Pontchartrain. New Orleans, named for Philippe II, Duc d'Orléans, regent of France under Louis XV, has been a leading commercial center since its founding and has one of the most active ports in the United States.

Since World War II (1939-1945), the city's rich cultural heritage has contributed to its emergence as a major international tourist center. New Orleans has a semitropical climate, with an average daily temperature range of (42°F) to (61°F) in January and (73°F) to (91°F) in July. The city averages (62 in) of precipitation per year.

(New Orleans Climate Chart © Microsoft Corporation. All Rights Reserved).

At the city's core is the Vieux Carré, a historic neighborhood also known as the French Quarter, which is the site of the original settlement. Exotic houses and wrought-iron balconies reflecting French and Spanish architectural styles dominate this unique district's narrow streets.

The French Quarter's central plaza is Jackson Square, which features a bronze statue of Andrew Jackson, who led the defense of New Orleans during the War of 1812 (1812-1815) and later became U.S. president.

The Saint Louis Cathedral, built in 1794 and remodeled in 1851; the Cabildo and the Presbytère, former government buildings erected in the 18th century; surround the square and the Pontalba Buildings, large apartment buildings constructed in 1849. East of Jackson Square on Decatur Street is the French Market, home of numerous shops.

On nearby Chartres Street stands the Ursuline Convent, this was founded by Ursuline nuns in 1734 and is thought to be the oldest building in the Mississippi Valley. On the eastern boundary of the French Quarter on Esplanade Avenue is the Old U.S. Mint, which was built in the 19th century and refurbished in 1981.

A streetcar line parallels the Mississippi River and provides transportation from one end of the French Quarter to the other. Jazz is still a popular attraction on Basin and Bourbon streets, where this treasured American musical form first appeared and gained fame in the early 20th century.

On the western end of the French Quarter is On the western end of the French Quarter is Canal Street, the location of the U.S. Custom House, which housed the Union Army headquarters during the American Civil War (1861-1865), and the boundary between the French Quarter and the Central Business District, the city's commercial hub.

River walk, a large shopping center, and the New Orleans Convention Center, which holds hundreds of conferences a year, are the business district's most prominent buildings. Farther to the west lies the Garden District, a neighborhood of numerous beautiful 19th-century homes. Still farther west is Uptown, another fine residential neighborhood.

The Old Carrollton Court House, now Lucher School, is its most notable structure. The Saint Charles Avenue Streetcar Line, a national historic landmark, connects Uptown and the Garden District to the Central Business District and the French Quarter. On the northern side of the city, in the Garden District, and adjacent to the French Quarter, are several cemeteries that are noted for their architecturally distinctive above ground crypts of marble and granite.

Of special interest is the Saint Louis Cemetery, which was unique in its day because it contained not graves but crypts and vaults, since the city's mud foundations made underground burial impossible.
Michael’s Life Time Memories  By Michael Brown

The New Orleans metropolitan region covers 3,400 sq mi, and includes the counties—known in Louisiana as parishes—of Orleans, Jefferson, Saint Bernard, Saint Charles, Saint John the Baptist, Saint Tammany, Saint James, and Plaquemines.

At the center is the city of New Orleans (coextensive with Orleans Parish), with a land area of 181 sq mi. Extending from this base are numerous suburban towns in the surrounding parishes. Metairie, Harahan, and Kenner are rapidly growing residential communities on the east bank of the Mississippi River in Jefferson Parish, as is LaPlace in St. John the Baptist Parish.

Since the opening of the Mississippi River Bridge in 1958, several communities on the west bank of the river have become similar suburban localities. These include Algiers, which was once a noted local center for shipbuilding and railroads and is presently the location of the Naval Support Activity, and the three communities of Harvey, Marrero, and Gretna in Jefferson Parish.

Gretna is home to the David Crockett Fire Company Number 1, the oldest volunteer fire company in the United States. Chalmette, site of the 1815 Battle of New Orleans and the location of Kaiser Aluminum and Chemical Company, is a mixed residential-industrial area in St. Bernard Parish. Unfortunately Kaiser chemical plant has close down but the neighborhood has continue to strive.

Since 1960, due to the Lake Pontchartrain Causeway, which opened in 1956, and Interstate 10, this burgeoning suburban sprawl has extended north of Lake Pontchartrain into Slidell, Mandeville, and Covington in St. Tammany Parish.

Growing up in New Orleans was always a thrill for me because of how famous our beloved city is, there is always something intriguing to do.

Our state is called sportsman paradise there is plenty of good hunting; also, Louisiana’s parks and other recreational facilities attract hundreds of thousands of tourists to the state every year. A large number of the parks lie along water, and water sports are among the most popular forms of outdoor recreation in Louisiana.

There is excellent fishing in Louisiana’s many freshwater streams and lakes and along the Gulf of Mexico. Wooded areas and coastal marshes offer fine opportunities to observe wildlife. Among the many interesting places to visit are the numerous units of the state park system. Privately owned sites open to the public include many of Louisiana’s beautiful mansions from what is called the antebellum period before the Civil War (1861-1865).

The state’s chief tourist center, New Orleans, offers visitors many attractions of historic interest, as well as the atmosphere of a cosmopolitan city.

Many of the state’s most popular tourist attractions are located in New Orleans Louisiana there are many beautiful antebellum mansions. Among those open to visitors are Rose down, at Saint Francisville; Shadows-on-the-Teche, at New Iberia; and Oakland, Beau Fort, and Cherokee, all near Natchitoches. Scenic places of interest include Avery Island, on the Gulf Coast, where there are subtropical gardens and a bird sanctuary. Sites on the National Register of Historic Places lay scattered in rural and urban settings around the state.

Moreover, of course everyone have heard about The Mardi Gras carnival held in New Orleans is one of the best-known annual events in the country. The carnival traditionally begins on Twelfth Night and culminates on Mardi Gras, or Fat Tuesday, which proceeds the first day of Lent.

In New Orleans there is also a collegiate football game played in the Sugar Bowl during the New Year’s holiday, and a Jazz and Heritage festival, celebrating the unique culture of Louisiana, in May.

Shreveport is home to the Independence Bowl football game and many other events. There is a Peach Festival at Ruston in June. During the late summer, the shrimp fleets are blessed at a number of places on the coast with shrimp, crabs, and crawfish. In the fall, the International Rice Festival is held at Crowley and the Louisiana Sugar Cane Festival at New Iberia.

We have every type of festival you can imagine.

The Louisiana State Fair takes place at Shreveport in October. The character of the state’s small towns can be seen in their many community festivals, such as the Corney Creek Porkfest in Bernice, in October, the
Louisiana Catfish Festival in Des Allemands, in July, and the Mandeville Seafood Festival, in July New Orleans is known for its food, And of course the annual gumbo festival.

These are just some events that take place in the beautiful state of Louisiana. The southern part of Louisiana is known for the cultural influence of various nonwhite and ethnic groups, especially Creoles, who descended from French and Spanish settlers, and Cajuns, who trace their ancestry to French-Canadians.

New Orleans is the region’s cultural hub of diverse ethnic backgrounds resulting in unique cultural expressions, including Dixieland jazz, which originated in the city.

Before we move on to the next chapter, I am going to leave you with a little information on how the African American community of New Orleans has long nurtured a number of distinctive Carnival customs.

The largest African American Krewe of Mardi Gras is the Zulu Social Aid & Pleasure Club Inc., which presents one of the premier attractions of the Mardi Gras season.

Combining Mardi Gras revelry with features reminiscent of an elaborate minstrel show, the Zulu parade is especially boisterous. Many Zulus march in blackface (black makeup traditionally used in minstrel shows) and wear grass skirts as they distribute gold-painted coconuts to crowds of observers.

Now many of my family members belonged to the organization they were always on the floats, I would also get invitations to the ball are whatever function was going on I remember some nights staying up decorating coconuts for the parade.

Another important African American Carnival tradition is the annual appearance of the Mardi Gras Indians, groups of black men who dance through the streets in costumes inspired by the traditional clothing of Native Americans.

Each member of a Mardi Gras Indian tribe creates his own costume, usually incorporating colorful feathers and intricate beadwork. Most scholars believe that the Mardi Gras Indian tradition began in the late 19th century. In the past, rivalries between tribes sometimes led to violent confrontations. Today, such conflicts have given way to a competition among the Mardi Gras Indian tribes for the most elaborate costume.

Tribes are our wards like some cities have zones or counties well we have wards that are numbered, and every ward has an Indian tribe, ever year they work on their costumes for the following year.

So when Mardi Gras come around, each tribe get up early Fat Tuesday morning and start their day chanting their cadence, dancing through their neighborhoods and then on to their destination.

All the tribes would meet up no matter how far, they would sing and dance and drink their firewater all the way there, and pick up everyone from their neighborhoods. By the time you reach your destination, you had the whole neighborhood with you.

It is a beautiful sight, everyone would finally meet up, now theirs over a dozen different tribes everyone would get there time to do their own thing, and this would last throughout the day this is how some people spend their Mardi Gras.

We also have the car races and motorcycle races that would last all day where everyone would bring their hotrods and wage their bets on who would win this to would be an all day event.

We also have second lines this is where the black community every weekend would Parade around the neighborhood playing music and then at the end of dancing doing the second line they would have a block party, this still goes on today in different areas of the city at any given time this is only a New Orleans thing. This came from a tradition that The New Orleans brass band created in the black community for over a century. The “parade-jazz” sound evolved out of groups that accompanied funeral processions and performed at annual Mardi Gras celebrations. Featuring trumpets, saxophone, trombone, tuba, snare drum, and percussion, elements of this musical form are at the core of the early New Orleans jazz sound pioneered by Joe (“King”) Oliver and Louis Armstrong.

I hope you get to visit our beautiful city one day, make sure you bring your appetite.
Chapter 5

Experiencing the Wonders of the World

You recall I told you there would be times that are more exciting. That my father and I would have. Around the time, I was turning thirteen; my father started taking me on the road with him every summer. I could not wait for the last day of school.

My father or uncle would bring us, meaning Cousins Ronnie and Steve, on adventures that would be invigorating to the imagination if you were into trucks, big diesel eighteen-wheelers; you see my father and one of his brothers drove trucks for the same company. Engel Van Lines, they were located in Elizabeth, New Jersey and Los Angeles. My father had a white freightliner forty-five foot drop trailer this truck was long like my uncle. My uncle Henry had a Kentwood his truck was the same size double sleeper, his truck was grey, white, and black. I also had uncles who lived on the Southside of Chicago, where I also use to go, some summers, or whenever we were in the area. Now the majority of my father side of the family migrated their before I was born.

My father has three brothers who live there, and my father, his father lives there. Therefore, you see this was also like home whenever we were there.

I have cousins, aunts and a grandfather, and uncles that live there.

I can recall I was hanging out with some of my cousins and they wanted to introduce me too my grandfather because I had never met him, I was so excited to meet him, when we got there to his house, I can’t recall what one of my cousins told my grandfather that this is your grandson Michael. He wanted to meet you. The man said I do not have a grandson name Michael gets this little boy from my house.

I will never ever forget that. Before I go any further, I must tell you about how my grandfather came to disown me. I know this chapter is about the wonders of the world. However, this is one of the wonders of my world.

My father came from a big family he has seven brothers and threes sisters, now my father was born in 1932 in a small poor town in Louisiana.

The story that I remembered hearing was that my grandmother and grandfather could not afford to raise all their children so they had to give some of the kids to their friends to raise them and this woman, who I became to know as my Grandma Harris, she took my father in, and raise him. In addition, she and her husband moved him to New Orleans.

My father would bring us over to grandma Harris’s every weekend, and also in the summertime we would stay with her and my uncle Joe, they live in the magnolia projects, I still know the address today It was 2626 Tolodona court, right across from the brown derby.

I never really knew my biological grandparents on my father side. My grandfather hurt me so bad, I cried and went to the house and told my father, and that’s when he told me how he was angry with his dad for disowning him and some of his siblings, and that he and his father have not spoken a word in years, and his father is taking it out on me. Moreover, my father told me I should have never gone their without his consent.

After that, I inform my sisters how this man had disown me, and from then own, we never tried to be acquainted with him ever again. Now unexpected years down the line like twenty years or so, when he was on his dying bed he call for a meeting with I and my siblings to talk with us but we refused to go. I recall my aunt relaying the message that he had die later. I all ways wonder what my grandfather was like?

You remember I told you Chicago was like home as well growing up. My cousins and I would try to see all the famous sights there were to see, whenever we would travel; did you know that the world's first skyscraper was constructed in Chicago?
Michael's Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Several of the tallest buildings in the world are located in the central part of the city, including the world's second tallest, the Sears Tower. I can remember going all the way up to the observation deck its one hundred and ten stories high and the view is breath taking.

I also see why Chicago is called the windy city, with the breeze that comes off Lake Michigan and the Chicago River. It whips around those buildings.

We also use to take boat rides on the lake. We would go where they filmed good times. These were some of the sights we would visit with my father's friend his female friend of course. It seems like my father had a lot of them everywhere we went, I remember these women I will call her Gail, my father's friend had a son around my age, and she would take us to concerts in Grant Park.

Then when it was time to go, it is off to another state, my father was the type to not let me miss a lot of famous places if we were close to a monument are something. In addition, if my father thinks I should see it, he would go out his way to allow me to take in the site.

I remember leaving Illinois we would swing into Gary, Indiana, so I can see where Michael Jackson lived awesome uh. I would also get to see Norte Dame the famous University.

Now it was not all fun and games when it was time to work! , it was time to work! My father taught me the meaning of hard work at a young age.

He taught me how to take inventory how to pack and box up dishes how to load and unload the trucks how to make everything fit you had to know how to eye everything in the house and know where to fit it in the truck. My father started slowly teaching me how to drive at a young age by the time I was sixteen I was driving on the New Jersey turnpike.

Now speaking of New Jersey this was the home office of Engel van Linx and it was also home to my uncle Henry and also my father this is where I would spend a lot of time as well.

My uncle Henry was my favorite well let me straighten this out my uncle Henry was the only uncle I spent the most time with out of all my uncles, I traveled with him just as much as I traveled with my father.

I loved the time when we would meet up somewhere together with my cousins. Those were some of the best times.

I can recall all of us meeting up in Colorado Springs eating at the 76 truck stop. Me and my cousins would all ways go in the gift stores you see every truck stop has these huge stores that have all kind of neat things in them, for instances have you ever been in a car shop that sells all kind of car paraphernalia? Well same thing just only truck paraphernalia we use to like looking around in the stores buying shirts, hats, and we also collected match boxes because they had their own state logo on them we had every state pretty much in the united states, this was a great conversation item as well.

After, we would finally finish at the truck stop; we would go to the rest area. Now other times we would shower at the truck stop, get our trucks washed. I made sure that my father kept his truck clean. Our truck was white with red lettering and chrome smoke stacks, the rims, and the fuel tanks were all chrome. I talked my father to put all kind of lights on the truck, at night it would light up like a Christmas tree.

On some nights my father, his helper and I, his name Is Jimmy, Jimmy was a good man he like to drink, my father would get a couple of six packs of beer and a ice chest. In addition, we would go up into the mountains that over look the state. Sometimes my cousins and I would go fishing while my father and uncles would be drinking and shooting the breeze.

When night would fall, we would sometimes bed down on top of the trucks. I always slept between the air horns and the air conditioner unit on top of the cab of the tractor, sometimes I would over sleep and my father would start the truck while I am on top of it to wake me up, to tell me it was time to go.

Sometimes we would get in the trailer and strap it from the inside so no one could get in while we were sleep, and we would stay up for hours talking before falling asleep.

Denver is also known as the Mile High City, a nickname it was given because a spot on the state capitol steps is at an elevation of 5,280 ft exactly one mile above sea level.

Denver is one of the most beautiful places in the world to visit it is breath taking coming into Colorado springs at night time the view is magnificence, also Pikes Peak, one of the most famous peaks in the Rocky
Mountains, located in the Front Range, central Colorado, near Colorado Springs. Although the elevation (4,301 m/14,110 ft) of the peak is not the highest in the state, Pikes Peak is noted for a commanding view as well.

I can remember our radiator busted on us while we were passing through, we had to continually put water in it until we got to a truck stop we use our ice chest for starters, and we all so had help from some noble motorist.

I had so many wonderful experiences traveling the country with my father; for a young kid this was awesome we would sometimes ride in convoys, now some convoys can consist of 20 or more trucks at any given time I use to love when my father would get into one it was so exciting. Can you imagine riding through the Rocky Mountains in a convoy?

My father truck was fast our CB handle was the white ghost. My father would allow me to talk on it, and I was good at it I knew all the codes and the trucker language, my father also bought me a base station citizen band radio for the house, I and my friends would always talk on it when we would get out of school and sometimes before.

Back to more sights and adventures, I experienced doing my travels; I also visited the Grand Canyon National Park in Arizona and Flagstaff, in northern Arizona, I also visited the Hoover Dam on the Colorado River It lies partly in Arizona and partly in Nevada and backs into the lower portion of the Grand Canyon.

Flagstaff is a tourist resort situated at an elevation of about (6970 ft) at the base of the San Francisco Peaks. Now I can remember a beautiful 76 truck stop that we spent the night. The view was great the elevation that you are at is just breath taking; all you can do is praise God knowing that this beauty could not come from anyone but God.

We also spent a lot of time in the Los Angeles area. This was also home to Engel van Lines west coast division. Besides that, my father sister lived there as well she lived Southwest of Hollywood. Home of the University of California better known as UCLA. My aunt Shirley lived in this big beautiful house that had about ten bedrooms, she lived there alone I never knew her to ever get married are have kids. She use to rent the rooms out to individuals, every time we were there we would stay with her she had this big billiards table in her entertainment room. This is where I would learn how to shoot pool.

I could look out her window and see Beverly Hills and Stevie Wonders house up on this big mountain.

Now my father also had a girl friend in this area as well she lived in north Hollywood near Griffith Park and The Hollywood Bowl. She would take me to the Hollywood Walk of Fame and the Chinese Theater, I would take tours to Beverly Hills, tour the movie stars homes, I also tour universal studios we also went to wheel of fortune and jeopardy.

I seen where they made the movie Jaws and where they made the Ten Commandments, Dallas and Falcon Crest. I have been to Disney Land. I loved California so much when I got older I move there as you will see just keep reading.

The coastal area of California is also breath taking Highway (1) runs along the California coastline through the Big Sur area, south of Monterey. Big Sur covers a large area along the Pacific Ocean. Moreover, it is admired for its beautiful forests, craggy peaks, and breathtaking coastline it is an amazing sight to see.

My father and I would sometimes visit Mexico as well whenever we are in San Diego we would go to Mexico. Now Mexico extends along the entire southern border of the United States, from Tijuana, just south of San Diego, California, southeast to Matamoros, along the Gulf Coast of Texas just below Brownsville. The entire border between Texas and Mexico follows the Rio Grande.

You could drive along interstate ten and be right on side of the Rio Grande. You could see old Mexico. My father his helper and I would go to Tijuana and get our drink on then head on back across the border. I always wanted the women and I think my father knew he just wanted to see what I was going to do.

Now you must also visit northern California this was where my mother and father would meet and marry at San Francisco’s Presidio my parents lived in the lighthouse at the military installation.

San Francisco’s Presidio was a military installation for more than 200 years before being incorporated into the Golden Gate National Recreation Area in 1994. Founded in 1776, it was the most remote military
Michael’s Life Time Memories  By Michael Brown

outpost of the Spanish empire. In 1822, following Mexico’s independence from Spain the Presidio became a Mexican possession.

The 1848 Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo made the installation, along with California, a possession of the United States. Visible in the distance are the Golden Gate Bridge and Sausalito and we all know how beautiful and famous this land mark is, it is an awesome site as well to see and to drive over it I would eventually have my share of traveling across this bridge and the bay bridge quite often.

By now, you can get an idea that I am a seasonal traveler but I must say northern California is one of the most beautiful places in the entire world.

Ride with me as I take you on this magnificence journey through the bay area that I now call home.

I consider the bay area the most beautiful place in the world I love the scenery and all its connecting cities that makes up the bay area such places, as Oakland, which lies within a rim of low hills along the eastern shore of San Francisco Bay, The city's average elevation, is (42 ft). Manufacturing plants and port facilities line Oakland Inner Harbor, a long, narrow inlet of the bay. The inlet separates Oakland from the city of Alameda, which is connected to Oakland by several bridges and a vehicle tunnel. Just inland from the waterfront area lies downtown Oakland, the central business district along the hilly eastern edge of the city, overlooking the bay is a wide belt of parks and Oakland’s main residential districts.

The Oakland metropolitan area is composed of Alameda and Contra Costa counties. The region is also known as Greater East Bay. And includes the cities of Alameda, Berkeley, Concord, Fremont, Hayward, Richmond, and Walnut Creek. The city of Piedmont is an enclave within Oakland. All the places I have just name are beautiful, the scenery is just amazing that is what I love about northern California area, and words cannot describe the enchanting place I call home.

Now Berkeley has a fine marina and is a water sports and fishing center. Moreover, they have many small bookshops and renowned restaurants; the Berkeley Rose Garden; the University Griffith Park Griffith Park of California Botanical Garden; and the University of California Berkeley Art Museum.

My father had a girl friend who was a music director for the University of Berkeley I remembered her being this nice intelligent young woman; she died of a brain aneurism.

I can write a book on California but I must stop for now but you will get a chance to ride with me again in a later chapter of this beautiful place.

I would like to take you to another one of my favorite places before I leave California, this place is a waterfront square of shops and restaurants that has been named to honor one of the city's early residents and well-known authors, Jack London. I am also crazy about this place I and my wife and kids would spend a lot of time going to the movies and dinner in this location in Oakland and china town.

Growing up on the road with my father was amazing for me as a young kid to see the world and explore some of the most beautiful places in the United States I have so many great adventures I can share.

I would like to take you on another adventure that did not turn out the way we had planed it. This time we took off for destination Chattanooga, Tennessee. It was my sister Kathryn, my father, Henry and I. Now Henry was another one of my father’s’ friends. Sometimes my father would allow one of his friends a chance to make some money and see the world. We were to drop Kathryn off in Tennessee she was going to spend the summer with our auntie Dee, and we were to continue to Saint Louis Missouri.

I will never forget this one day as long as I live. I was thirteen years old “oh” in case you are wondering why I have this story in this section of my book. It is because this was a wondering situation that I was baffle with for a while.

Now Before I continue with the story. The word “Wonder” is a cause of astonishment or surprise something that excites wonder MARVEL; a fact or circumstance giving occasion to be surprised *it's a wonder he wasn’t killed

...........

Page 33 of 188
Michael’s Life Time Memories

Back to the story, we had just stop at the truck stop in Meridian Mississippi. We fueled up and ate dinner, we met my uncle and my two cousins they were on their way to New Jersey, we had a good time my uncle helper was a friend of the family who went to school and hung out with my oldest sister Claudette, we call him Nuck.

Nuck would also sometimes drive for my father; after everyone had eaten, we said our goodbyes and my father told my uncle that we would see them in New Jersey after we leave Saint Louis.

We got in our trucks and we were off my father and my uncle was racing I mean they were getting it, pedal to the medal, about seventy miles out. My uncle and my father blew their air horns and said their goodbyes again and we both went our separate ways.

It was night time and I was sleepy, sitting on the dog house now a dog house is like the console in a car but only bigger, I had decided to take my pants off and get in the sleeper so I left Kathryn on the dog house she was busy enjoying the

Sights, Henry was in the passenger sit.

It happens around two A.M. I heard everyone screaming and yelling I woke up to fire all around me, it was like I’m dreaming my father was trying to reach for me.

Kathryn and Henry was trying to get their door open we are on a bridge its pitch black I wake up thinking everyone is dead so I lay back down.

All of a sudden, my father pulls me out I still do not know how we got out of that truck. None of us for that matter knew how we got out.

All I can remember is that we were looking for my father they had truckers lined up for miles on both sides of interstate seventy-five.

Remind you I am in my boxers with no shoes on my feet the truck is burning to the frame the whole truck.

Tractor and trailer on fire all you can hear is my father bullets going off from his gun that was in the truck.

We finally located my father laying in the median unconscious it took forever for the ambulance to get there, we were in the middle of know where the eyewitness news were there before the ambulance arrived.

They were trying to film my father and I just went off yelling at them to get away from my father. I had a chain around my neck with a cross on it. I pop it off my neck and gave it to my father, asking him to not die on me.

My father had second and third decree burns over his body so they had to rush him to the burn unit, luckily, they had a semi burn unit where we were in Montgomery Alabama.

The truck was hanging off the bridge the only thing holding it up was the tractor.

At the hospital they gave me a robe to wrap up in we stayed at the hospital until they ran us off telling us to get some sleep, all my father money had gotten burn.

Therefore, we did not have any money they put us in a motel not too far from the hospital the next morning I really do not recall where we got the money from but we had money to go shopping.

I needed to get some pants and shoes so we walked to a department store that was not too far away on our way to the store we spotted our truck in a savage yard. By seeing the truck you wonder how one survived, everything was burned to the frame.

Once we got back to the room me and my sister and Henry happen to see the news, they were talking about our accident. We were on the front cover of the newspaper and we had made the five o clock news.

The paper had my father laying on the ground unconscious and another picture of the truck on fire and truckers back up for miles.

My mother and my father’s sister, Aunt Mary Louise husband uncle Bennie were inform about what had happen and they were on their way to get us and bring us home.

We return to the hospital and waited for the family to arrive so they may discharge my father. My mother was going to nurse him back to heath besides that is my mother occupation. He’ll be in good care,
my mother finally arrived and sign the discharge papers and we were off going back to New Orleans my uncle drove all the way home.

By the time we made it home my uncle Henry the one we had just left, they must have gotten the news because they were there the next day at the house, my father had to lay up for about six months and I didn’t want no part of a truck ever again.

Little did I Know my father was well aware of how I was feeling he knew I was afraid so he put me back on the truck with my uncle and my cousins.

So I wouldn’t be afraid of trucks so we loaded up for Washington DC, come to find out that our truck was sabotage, after a long investigation it was proven that the guy who did it had a lot of valuable antiques on the truck and he was going to collect the insurance money.

My sister never got to spend that summer in Chattanooga. I was back on the road this time with my uncle in his Kentwood; on our way to Washington, DC, I was somewhat jumpy for a while after the accident eventually I got back in the grove of things.

Washington, D.C., is the capital of the United States of America. The city of Washington has the same boundaries as the District of Columbia (D.C.), a federal territory established in 1790 as the site of the new nation’s permanent capital.

Named after the first U.S. president, George Washington, the city has served since 1800 as the seat of federal government. It is also the heart of a dynamic metropolitan region. During the 20th century, the Washington, D.C., metropolitan area grew rapidly as the responsibilities of national government increased, both at home and throughout the world.

Now I also had some cousins that live in the capital city and they are Browns, which live only eight blocks away from the Lincoln memorial not too far from the river by Potomac Park.

They had a house full of children. Moreover, they were bad as hell. I can recall one of my little cousins can up to me and punch me in the stomach, now the older kids were pretty cool we would go to jack in the box walk around the neighborhood, I never seen so many rich black folks other than in Atlanta Georgia.

Mount Pleasant, a few miles north of the White House, became popular, first Cleveland Park and subsequently Wesley Heights and American University Park emerged as preferred residential destinations.

Just above the old downtown, the area known as Shaw emerged as the most prominent black section of the city. The concentration of theaters and other social activities there gave U Street the nickname of Black Broadway.

DC is call chocolate city. They have many beautiful women. We had many good times with my uncle I can also recall a time in South Carolina.

Steve and Ronnie and I, these are my first cousins we were unloading the truck with my uncle, this was a big house very big it took all day to unload it we got tired and stop working I and Steve. My uncle Henry got really angry with us when it was time for us to leave he told Steve and I we better not get in his truck he said if we can’t work that we need to find our way back home.

He was serious because he left us right there and drove off these people looking like no he didn’t leave those kids, so I and Steve started walking we didn’t have a clue where we were going.

About fifteen minutes later, we heard a truck and we turn around to see if it was my uncle and it was and he told us to get our ass in the truck and that he did not want to hear anything from us.

That was my uncle Henry. Henry died while I was in the military; my family did not tell me what had happen while I was in training. They told me later on that he had died and that he wanted me to have his truck.

When I got home to claim the truck, his wife did not want to let it go and my father did not want the hassle.

Therefore, he told me not to worry about it my aunt Marie was so selfish she let the truck sit up and rot, and allowed people to vandalize it until there was nothing left this was a five-year-old Kentwood double sleeper.

I wonder what would have been become of my life if I had gotten that truck.
You remember I told you that I also grew up in New Jersey well my father had a home there as well, I never told my mother or sisters.

Every summer his girl friend would take me places like Coney Island, now Coney Island is a residential community and amusement area, in the borough of Brooklyn, New York City, on the Atlantic Ocean.

We would spend the whole day there, I always liked the go-carts, Bernice that was my father girl friend name, we got along very good, she treated me awesome she had four kids and one of them was my little brother.

Yes, my little brother if you were keeping count that makes three right. Three boys theirs David who lives in New Orleans, Louisiana and theirs Corey who lives in Stockton, California and now here is Clayton who lives here in Elizabeth, New Jersey. I also would find out later that I also have a sister that looks like Claudette a light-skinned version of her, her name is Vanessa.

Now Vanessa belongs to another female that lives down the street from my father’s club that is call the 901 club.

Bernice, her kids and I got along very good. I want name them for the sake of privacies. But I will tell you, I and the daughter were an item for a while her name is Teresa she was my girl friend, she helped me through my military bid when I was overseas, we were constantly writing each other, she gave me something to look forward to after the military.

Bernice all ways wanted to take me sightseeing and I was always looking forward going wherever she had in mind.

I can recall the first time visiting Ellis Island in Upper New York Bay near Manhattan it is best known for the immigrant station, this is all so an amazing place with so much history, Ellis Island, complex of one natural and two artificial islands.

Joined by causeways, in Upper New York Bay, northeastern New Jersey, and southeastern New York, the complex belongs to the U.S. government. From 1892 to 1954, it was the headquarters of a U.S. immigration and naturalization district.

The early Dutch colonists called the original island Oyster Island; it was later known as Gibbet Island, after a pirate was hanged there in 1765. Samuel Ellis, a merchant of New York City, bought the island in the 18th century and gave it his name.

I have been to so many places, now I never been inside but I stood outside of Madison Square Garden and the Apollo Theater.

I have all been to the Statue of Liberty; Ferries from Battery Park in New York City take visitors to Liberty Island. Visitors ride an elevator or climb 192 steps to an observation area at the top of the pedestal.

I chose to climb all the stairs to the top; they also have a museum inside the pedestal details the history of the monument and feature the original torch and flame.

The full climb of 354 steps (the equivalent of a 22-floor building) takes the most ambitious visitors from the pedestal to the crown, which offers outstanding views of New York Harbor and New York City. I wrote my name inside her crown and torch.

We also took in the view of the city from the observation deck of the Empire State Building.

We also took in Niagara Falls (waterfall), waterfall in east central North America, located on the Niagara River, in western New York and southeastern Ontario. Niagara Falls consists of two cataracts: the Horseshoe, or Canadian, fall, we also went to the Canadian side this city is in Niagara Regional Municipality, southeastern Ontario, Canada.

It is a port on the Niagara River opposite Niagara Falls, New York. The city overlooks a cataract of Niagara Falls known as Horseshoe Falls or Canadian Falls; the crescent-shaped cataract is 57 m (187 ft) high and carries nine times more water than its United States counterpart carries. Niagara Falls is an enormously popular tourist destination, and it is a major source of electricity for Ontario. The city is connected to the U. S. side of the falls by several bridges, including the Rainbow and Whirlpool bridges.

These are just some of the wonders of my world that I have experience in this country, I was fortune enough to travel overseas as well, and you will read about some of my adventures in a later chapter.
Meeting Greg

Now you remember I spoke briefly about my brother-in-law well, when I finally met him the period is somewhat confusing. I was young getting ready to go in the military; Greg was very respectful when I met him, I guess he had to be nervous, after all, we did not know anything about him at the time this would be our first time meeting each other.

Greg did not waste any time getting himself situated. He found a job working for the state department of transportation. My mother and I would help watch Lamond. Lamond is my nephew we fell in love with him instantly. He was so handsome beautiful kid and we enjoyed him, Lamond was a good baby, now Greg and I would venture off from time to time he was always asking me to ride with him, I learned a lot from my brother-in-law as well.

I use to go with him to his job some days; he had a coworker name Jimmy. Jimmy is a Caucasian man nice fellow they job was repairing the red lights in the city and this was doing the time I started smoking weed with Greg.

Remember now I was experimenting with drugs before I met Greg. I know Greg you felted like you were responsible for me, but if you are reading this.

It was not your fault, the things I did it was because I wanted too. It was my choice and it was a learning experience, I would not be the man I am now if I did not go thru half of the things we did.

I will not put the majority of our excursions in this book because I do not know if they can handle it, we definitely live the life for a while. Didn't we?

Greg and I would sometimes go out to eat he would take me to places that I did not know anything about and I would observed his table manners, on how he was so elegant and polite and he knew how to make everyone comfortable around him.

Greg played a big part in my manhood, other than my father. My father was always on the road and when we did spend time together, it was more on a friendship level then father and son. The men in my life were not good role models, but I took what I could get from each one of them and created I have little of them all in me.

My relationship with Greg was close I could go to him for anything and if it was in his power to help he would. I always drove his car. Greg had some awesome connections this is where I would get educated in marijuana.

I have had every kind of weed you can name growing up in my era. The connection was so strong, I knew everybody in my neighborhood my brother-in-law did not know half of the people I knew. However, he had the connections of hundreds of pounds of marijuana at any given time. Now Greg use to keep duffel bags of pounds in the closet I am talking from real Acapulco gold, Red Bud, Jamaican, etc.

I would go to school with ounces' on me. I can recall before the bell ring, we will be sitting in the parking lot getting smoke out until it was time to go to class. I was late one morning as I got out of the car I drop an ounce out of my pocket running to class when one of the teachers approached and asked me to give it to him, and I asked him was he crazy?

I politely put the marijuana back in my pocket and went to class.

Now whenever someone wanted to buy the product I would be the go to person I knew the clientele, Greg would sell ounces for sixty, I would charge seventy, and on top of that, I would take a little bit out of each bag before I give it to the costumer.

I had a good hustle at least I thought I did, the costumers did not have a choice either they wanted it or not I was hard on them.
Michael's Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

By me always having weed I got popular with all the dope dealers and all the women were approaching me.

Moreover, I loved the attention from everybody; little did I know I was setting myself up for a life of criminal activity, fast cars, fast women, and fast money. Eventually this time would end.

It was time for me to take flight; it was finally time for me to leave the nest and find my own way Greg and I would continue our adventures as time goes on keep reading.
Chapter 7

Leaving the Nest

The time had finally come for me to branch out on my own, my father have been preparing me for this for as long as I can remember. The year was nineteen seventy-nine.

I can remember it like it was yesterday. I was in Stockton California. We were at our other home I must say our home because. This was also my father’s home if you can recall I mention, Mrs. Geraldine in chapter two, the lady from my father’s insurance route that my father and I use to go by her house on my motorcycle and her sons and I would play in the cemetery?

Well she also had a baby for my father.

Corey Brown my little brother “yep” is you still keeping count. Now I have three brothers David Brown in New Orleans and Corey Brown in Stockton California and another brother and sister in New Jersey, as I stated in the previous chapter now the total is four.

I became close to them they treated me as if I was part of their family even though in a weird since of the way I am a part of their family.

The older kids and I meaning my little brother, we use to hang out all the time the oldest one was going to San José state he played football. And the other one Gerald we decided to go into the military one day we were smoking our backs out getting high on weed bugging out we decided to go to the army so we went to the recruiting office we didn’t tell anyone what we were doing.

We were to report back the next day, so that we may take the test we stayed there all day taking the test I pasted it with flying colors but Gerald didn’t and we had plan on going in on the buddy plan, I was so excited.

We got back to the house I told my father what I had done and he was excited for me, he just wanted to make sure that is what I really wanted to do. He kind of had an idea, because both of my sisters was in the service, Kathryn was in the army and Claudette was in the navy, and my mother at one time in the army, and my father also, he knew it was just a matter of time before I was going to enlist. I swore in the next day.

I was schedule to take my physical in Fresno. It is linked to northern and southern California by State Highway 99, which passes along the city’s western border. Highway 41 connects Fresno with the central coast and with Yosemite National Park.

My father dropped me off that evening; I stayed the weekend on base with all the new recruits I’m searching my mind to come up with anything that might make me change my mind and I can’t think of anything but going to find my sister who is in Germany. The morning finally arrives for me to take my physical, and I also past my physical with excellence only one problem I had.

I was under weight I needed to gain ten pounds before they would accept me; they gave me food vouchers to eat at any military base I wanted to. In addition, I could eat as much as I wanted too. I had three months to report in for another weight in, and my final swear in, so they put me on the delay entry program.

I had until September to report to Fort Dix, New Jersey, where I would begin my basic training. Therefore, on that note when I returned home where my father was in Stockton. I informed him of my news and my plans, and that I was going back home to New Orleans and spend some time with my mother before I ship off to the army.

My father and I had a nice talk and then he decided that it would be best if I go and spend some time with my mother, I wanted some time to think anyway. So I decided to take the train home, so my father bought me a train ticket I said my good byes and my father gave me some money and told me that he was proud of me we hugged I cried then I bored the train to never ever see my little brother again or Mrs. Geraldine.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

I had a nice ride home I really got a chance to see the countryside the old ghost towns, and western towns, it took me two and a half days to finally arrive to New Orleans, when I got to the train station I got a taxi to take me home.

Once I got home I had a list of all the things I was going to need for basic training my mother made sure that I had everything I needed, now that I knew when I was to leave I sold my rims off my car to one of my friends his name was Dwayne Walker.

we use to call him head now head had a trans am it was all white he was another one of my close friends later down the line head got into a fight with Calvin you remember Calvin the guy who use to take his older brother weed and sell it to us.

well they got into a fist fight, head had been drinking while they were fighting head felted down hit his head on the concrete and die right there on the spot.

I was the one that ran and told his parents that day, his mother refused to come but his father went back with me to the scene were his body was still lying thei when we got there.


Back to the story, I put my car on blocks, and was getting ready for my departure a lot of people offer to buy my car I just couldn’t do it,

While I was at home, I lost another friend beside Head. His name was Wendell he was the brother of Darrel the one I had a fight with when I was younger, well Wendell and I and a bunch of other guys were standing in front of my friend Steve house drinking beer while Steve was working on his car he had a nice Malibu that was trick out.

Now Wendell was riding his brother Sampson Suzuki 750, this was doing the time we were snorting PCP we use to call this drug tea or tack.

We had a nice buzz, Wendell asked me to hole his helmet while he makes a run, and he got on the motorcycle and took off down the street, it happen in slow motion we all witness the whole thing.

Wendell took off down the street shifting gears not looking at where he was going, he had to be high, and while he was looking down he did not see the car pulling out off the curve we started yelling Wendell! Wendell! Look out when he looked up it was too late they had an excursion tuning the corner heading straight for him, he ducked the truck but he couldn’t get past the car, he hit the car and flew off the bike and hit his head on the bumper of Mr. Bush car.

We ran to the scene I grabbed Wendell hand and started talking to him trying to keep him calm I’m telling him to hold on he was in bad shape, I let his hand go and told him that I would be right back, my mother wasn’t home so I ran to get Mrs. Bush she’s also is a nurse.

When we got back, there I seen Mrs. Bush going through the motion she had a code blue on her hand, Wendell die right there on the spot, I should have stayed there to keep him calm.

All of this I had experience within the little time I had left to go to basic training.

Upon my sister Kathryn getting the news that, I was joining the military. She was trying to get in touch with me. I founded out later she wanted to inform me not to join the army. She knew I didn’t like anyone telling me what to do she knew I had a bad temper, every since we were kids I had this really bad temper I would get so made and just tear up things when it wouldn’t go my way.

So how in the world was I supposed to make it in the army if I had a problem with authority?

Unfortunately, it was a done deal I had already committed it was no turning back now I was in the army just waiting on my day to leave.

The time had finally come for me to leave this time I wanted to fly, I flew into Newark, New Jersey and the army had a bus waiting there for me, it was not just me getting on that bus I can remember it like it was yesterday.

I was nervous and a little scare. I did not know what to expect. When we got to the base it was nighttime, we went into the reception station where we were inform to take everything out of our pockets.
They also inform us that they were our mother and father. They made us sign a form that they had already type up for our parents to let them know that we had arrive and that we were fine.

Once we got situated, they loaded us up in the trucks that looked like cattle trucks, delivered us to some people who just started fussing at us for no reason, once we got into the barracks, and got to sleep next thing you know they were wakening us up with flying trashcans.

That morning when we were awakened was one of the worse mornings I had experienced in a long time. It was like a nightmare. I was like what in the world am I doing here. What was I thinking by joining the army? I was not an athete I was not even in shape for that matter. I was a druggie to say the least I was smoking marijuana, drinking, smoking cigarettes, and now I am in the military. "WOW." That day was no walk in the park from that day on would be an adventure of a lifetime.

When not at war soldiers spend most of their time preparing for war. From the moment, a soldier enters the service; constant attention is paid to physical fitness. Physical training (PT) is the foundation for preparing soldiers for the stresses likely to be encountered in battle. Physical training includes running, group exercises, and sports and other physical fitness events.

Now you recall I told you I was not fit for this, if it wasn’t for the grace of God I would have not made it through basic training but I did.(I spent a lot of time at church I got save at the age of nineteen while in basic training).

When I got there, I could not do one push up. However, one thing I was good at was running. I could run for long distances without stopping. I was good a sit ups I eventually got physical fit I passed all my (PT) tests, it was not ease like I said I needed help from God that’s the only way I made it.

Now soldiers at their home military bases, spend most days training for wartime missions. This regime includes training on combat skills in classrooms, in nearby training grounds, and at special sites where combat equipment is stored.

Training exercises may last a few days or several weeks. Units routinely go to other military bases or the combat training centers in California, Louisiana, or Germany to practice combat skills in different settings. Soldiers concentrate on proficiency at operating their weapons and on coordinating their efforts with the squad, platoon, and company.

I became an expert with weapons and grenades I was able to tear down my weapon put it together in no time flat, and I was accurate with my throws with the grenades, and I could shoot.

The reason I excel in weapons was because of my hunting in the woods and shooting my BB guns, I hit forty nine out on fifty targets which made me get the expert medal in both weapons and grenades, my weapon was an M203 now this is a M16 with a 40 mm grenade launcher, which fires grenades. The grenades explode upon impact, making the weapon useful against both armored targets and enemy soldiers.

In addition to field training, enlisted soldiers spend considerable time in the classroom. It is very hard to stay awake in the classrooms you are always tired everywhere you go in basic training you are running no walking, only for marching.

I was also good at drill and ceremony; this was because of me playing in the band at school.

Military Drill is designed to enable a military commander to move a company in an orderly manner, to provide formations for combat, and to aid in discipline by instilling habits of precision and response to the leader’s orders. Because of the nature of modern warfare, such drills are now used primarily for ceremonial purposes.

During deployments, whether for training or actual fighting, soldiers usually live in tents or in their vehicles. In the field, they usually eat prepackaged rations called meals ready to eat (MRE). The Army also has contracted with private companies to provide hot meals to soldiers who are in the field or deployed to foreign countries. Most units also have cooks who make one or two hot meals a day. To assist with meal cleanup, some junior soldiers (privates or specialists) are occasionally assigned to pot scrubbing and other time-consuming chores.

Are you get into some kind of trouble you would get KP duty. Most soldiers dislike this assignment; it is sometimes called the kitchen police. At permanent bases, civilian employees do this work.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Once I graduated from basic training, we all cried upon leaving each other. (Before I go any farther let me tell you this).

I made friends with a lot of good young men and women, my unit was co-ed I was in company D-1-3 wired for sound, and, the females were in company two I must say I really enjoyed the people I met along the way I all so met one of my friends who I went to high school with.

We all use to sneak out and go to the clubs, one time we all got caught by our drill sergeant we were trying to sneak back in with a six pack of beer and he caught us that night we had to stand outside in the pouring rain in our underwear that was a crazy night.

I also had my friends Reginald and Bennie from home they use to mail me PCP “yep” and this other person in my platoon use to get weed in brownies from his parents, so you see I am still getting high every chance I get.

I can recall getting high, then going out on an exercise now exercises consisted of getting up and putting on all your gear that is approximately seventy-five pounds and we would march and sing cadence with our weapon in hand, and dress for battle we would march for twenty-two miles some days. That’s how far it was to the shooting range and also to the Obstacle courses now this is a military training area filled with obstacles (as hurdles, fences, walls, ditches) that must be surmounted.

I hated this I really assumed that I would excel in this area but I felled at this considerably, I also found out that I was afraid of height.

I know you are wondering how I made it if I am afraid of height. Well I never told anyone. Everything worked out to my advantage.

Every time it was, time for me to concord the course that I had felled at so miserably at. I would go to the end of the line and just blend in, although I really think one of my drill sergeants knew, he allowed me to get away with it.

This one afternoon at the Obstacle course we had to climb about one hundred and fifty feet and then parallel down this rope as I was paralleling down I heard my drill sergeant saying whatever you do, do not look down. Why in the world would he say do not look down.

Right when he said that guess what I had done? Looked down, and that is when I was stuck about one hundred and twenty five feet in the air.

I was so scared the whole platoon had to gather underneath to catch me from falling to the ground they caught me and I was all shaken up that day that is when I realized I was afraid of height.

Now I love to fly but I do not like heights I cannot even go very high at a football stadium, or get on rides at an amusement park.

Now back to the story.

Once I graduated from basic training it was time for (AIT) advance intensive training this was located in Aberdeen, Maryland at the military proving grounds this is where they tested all the latest weapons in the army from tanks to missiles, helicopters every weapon that the army uses that’s what is being tested. After, basic training, soldiers train in their military occupational specialty (MOS) and is assigned to a unit. My (MOS) was heavy wheel vehicle mechanic.

This training lasted for ten and a half weeks, now while we were in training we were allowed weekend pasts it didn’t make since for me to travel all the way home to New Orleans. So I started visiting my father in Elizabeth New Jersey, I was in Echo company at the time and some of the people I hung out with were from New York.

One Puerto Rican dude who was in my unit was all ways going home on the weekends. He was from Brooklyn New York.
I had another friend who was from Detroit. This person from Detroit had connections with weed. So we started hooking up and we would split pounds of marijuana three ways, now my Puerto Rican friend had a brand new trans am four speed I think it was a nineteen seventy nine, blue and grey with T tops we would all so split the gas money and he would drop me off a Penn Station.

I would catch the bus into Newark then I would either have someone pick me up are I would catch a cab to the house.

Picture me riding with all this marijuana on me I am in the military I have on jeans, Patten leather jump boots I'm wearing a nice cap on my head young physical fit can’t tell me nothing type of guy.

I all most got robbed in Penn Station by some gang members I seen them follow me into the bathroom lucky the police also was watching and came to my rescue.

I would always go home with all this marijuana and just bless everyone with it we would have smoke outs all the time and then we would go to central park to concerts or go to the zanzabar or to the zoo these were clubs in New York city.

Whenever I had free time, I would travel somewhere, I got the bug too travel from my father. I started traveling by myself; I would take the train or the greyhound bus.

On top of that, I enjoyed meeting all kind of interesting people. I would also take my girl friends on these adventures especially the females who never traveled before.

We would catch Amtrak and just ride I would purchase a round trip ticket for the both of us and we would just go some place and every stop, I will encourage her to get off for a minute just so she can say I have been there.

I myself think that traveling by train is one of the most romantic things a man and female can do, if you are traveling first class of course.

The scenic view is astonishing and the privacy, you would love it I am asking you to try this with your love one she would thank you beyond your wildest fantasies.
Chapter 8

Just visiting

Upon me graduating from (AIT) advance intensive training my orders had finally come in and I had a European assignment just what I put in for, I was to be ship to Frankfurt Germany I had thirty days to report to my new station.

Therefore, I decided to go home for a little while, it has been a while since my mother had laid eyes on me.

I caught a flight to New Orleans, then caught a taxi home when I got home everyone was glad to see me, I was looking good, so many of the girls I grew up with was interested in me, but I really was not trying to push up on them.

There was one young woman she was somewhat younger than I was, not that much, but any way when I got home on leave she came by every day.

I just was not interested in her she was fine and very athletic she reminded me of a young Jackie Joyner Kersee her name was Lynn. She was the sister to my friend Pettis the one who had gotten shot by the New Orleans police, I told you about in chapter two, the girl was crazy for me ever body was telling me I need to go on and hit it meaning have sex with her.

However, I refuse to, but we stayed friends she would eventually find her Mr. Right and started having babies.

Her sister Gwendolyn and I would start having flings here and there once I got out of the military.

Now Gwen is older than Lynn is, and she is sexy.

I would have Gwen and Alice both at the same time more than one time in my life they were at my disposal any time I wanted them.

Alice had gotten so fine I just had to have her, as well, Alice was also a friend of Kathryn, and I had almost asked Alice to be my girl friend. All these girls were attracted to me; many of these girls were my sisters’ friends I must say I would whine up with a number of them, as I got older. I had what they wanted and what they needed. It would be almost time for me to leave again.

I sold my car before I left to one of my friends from school, and I went shopping to purchase everything that I might have needed.

I tried to have as much fun as I could, the females was alright but things just weren’t the same when I got back home my friend Bennie had enrolled at southern university, Reginald had just signed up for basic training he was gone to fort Stewart and then I think he went to fort Sill Oklahoma.

Keith had moved in with his girl friend over the river. It was a transitioning period. I guess everyone was finish with school and trying to decide what he or she wanted to do with their life.

Then there were the people who were still on the corner with no purpose they were there when I left and the same ones were still there when I came back to visited.

You have not heard me mention Charlie yet. Now Charlie was a real good friend of mind as well. He has a brother we call Moon his name is Kenneth. We all went to school together Moon was a little younger than us we did not let him hang with us, but when I came home on leave, I would go and pick him up and take him out with me.

Because Charlie had left home and joined the army, pretty much all my friends joined the army.

Moon and I became real good friends actually he became my best friend you will hear more about him in another chapter we would have many adventures together.

I was actually glad when it was time to leave because; really all I had on my mind was going to find my sister.

“Germany here I come”!
On my own

It was time to leave home again. This time it would be for a long time I am nineteen years old I flew out of New Orleans into Boston, Massachusetts where I boarded a seven forty seven airplane this was a fascinated ride, the plane ride was over eleven hours long when we arrived there it was a nice beautiful day, at Rhine-Main Airport.

This is one of the most famous airports in this country when I got off the plane in the terminal everyone was standing at attention I am tripping wondering what is going on.

Finally, I realize that Alexander Haig the four star General was coming through we all got to shake his hand. This was the first African American highest-ranking officer in the United States Army.

Once the commotion was over, I did not know where I was going. Thank God that some one knew what they were doing, I was not by myself it had to be at least four of us that was heading in the same direction. Little did I know all new personnel go through Frankfurt twenty first replacement? This is the welcome post and you can say diagnostics, this is where you get all your shots and they assign you to your destination. They also ask you if you have any family are if you know anyone in Europe. Of course, I said yes that I have a sister who is station in Heidelberg, but to my surprise, they ship me to Heilbronn now I think this was the fifty-fifth.

I was diffidently in the wrong place I call home and got Kathryn phone number from my mother and then I call Kathryn and told her where I was at, and she was there in no time flat to see me.

My sister took me with her that day and brought me back later on that day because I had not yet reach my final destination.

Now Kathryn was station in Ludwigsburg not Heidelberg so the closest place I could get was Stuttgart so I chose Stuttgart and besides I had heard so much about this place, I finally got to my destination it was Boblingen, Germany the base was name panzer, 1st battalion third brigade my company was the seventy eight maintenance company. This private came to get me he asks me my name we shook hands he helped me with my duffel bag and we headed out to a duce and a half-army truck.

Private Fitzpatrick was his name and what do you know he and I was roommates, on the ride to the barracks he was schooling me on how things work, he was showing me around, and right then and there he ask me did I smoke.

Before I could answer him he had this soda can in his hand and was lighting up some hash right then and there I knew it was going to be a hell of a ride!

Welcome to Germany fast women, fast cars and drugs, now does this sound familiar to you?
This is just like the environment I grew up in, everywhere I would go.
I cannot escape this lifestyle.
This next chapter will be my experience in Europe.
Jefferson was the U.S. diplomatic representative to France in 1785.

One of Jefferson's most important functions in France was to report home how "the vaunted scene of Europe struck a savage of the mountains of America.

He was not well impressed. He urged his friend, Congressman James Monroe, to come and see for himself what France was like.

"It will make you adore your own country," he said. "How little do my countrymen know what precious blessings they are in possession of, and which no other people enjoy?"

"GOD blesses America"
My European experience

Germany, Federal Republic (Deutschland), major industrialized nation in central Europe, a federal union of 16 states Germany has a long, complex history and rich culture.

Germany is the seventh largest country in area in Europe, with a total area of 356,970 sq km (137,827 sq mi). The country has a varied terrain that ranges from low-lying coastal flats along the North and Baltic seas, to a central area of rolling hills and river valleys, to heavily forested mountains and snow-covered Alps in the south. Several major rivers and canals traverse the country, and have helped make it a transportation center.

The country has 82,398,326 people (2003 estimate). Germany is overwhelmingly urban, and most people lead a prosperous, comfortable lifestyle, with adequate leisure time and comprehensive social welfare benefits. Berlin is the capital and largest city, although Bonn, which was the provisional capital of West Germany, is still home to some government offices. The principal language is German, and two-thirds of the people are either Roman Catholic or Protestant.

Nineteen seventy nine, European assignment seventy eight maintenance company panzer barracks Boblingen, Germany right on the outskirts of Stuttgart, city in southwestern Germany, capital of the state of Baden-Württemberg, on the Neckar River.

This was a fascinating place once I got settle in. The transition from the states to being on the other side of the world would be easy for me thanks to my sister Kathryn.

It was not long before Kathryn came to check on me, to make sure I was all right, I think she was a little upset because I had joined the military.

She knew my temperament and she thought that the army would not be the place for me eventually she would pick up where she left off taking care of me.

The first week I got there, she came for me and took me to her barracks that is in Ludwigsburg this is another city in Germany near the Neckar River where she was station.

I stayed the whole weekend with her she had a two man room and her roommate Deedy, was gone for the weekend.

Now this girl Deedy was fine and good looking and she had swag, I was just too green, if she had been in my sights just a year or two later in life, she would have been in trouble.

You will hear some of my adventures, on how I was slaying everything in my path later.

I had a good time with Kathryn we were catching up on many things she also gave me one of her outfit to ware and she took me to Stuttgart to a club.

This was my first time going out with my sister ever. I was so excited to be with her.

I recall me getting something to drink and just looking around admiring the beauty of the club. It was a nice place Kathryn and I would take to the dance floor and have a few dances. When this beautiful young woman with these sexy hazel eyes come and just cut end on us dancing, and I am dancing with her and she leans over and asked what my name is.

You see I love an aggressive woman that knows what she wants and get right to the point, which is what she was about; we dance and talked for the most part of the night.

We exchange information; if I'm not mistaken I had to ask Kathryn for my own information to my whereabouts where I am living because this is my first week here and I haven't gotten familiar yet with my surroundings.
Well any way the young woman name was Gabrielle and she said her goodbyes and told me that she would call me.

After she had left, I would also again get another surprise, I met a friend of mine his name was Don, now Don was a friend of the family he was about a year or two older then I, but we all went to the same school he got out of school before I did. He was a star football player.

It was amazing way across the Atlantic Ocean; I would meet someone that closes to me. So now, I am overseas only about two weeks in.

I am not comfortable yet, but I have been acquainted with my sister again and also I met a friend of mine from the neighborhood and on top of everything else a female who would become my girl friend. Life is good so far, I am riding on top of the world.

Kathryn would call me from time to time and check on me and I would call her as well to see how she was doing. Because as you know not everything was a picnic we had to also work. I enjoyed the work I was doing; I was working on trucks and tanks and jeeps, hydraulic cranes etc. My occupation was heavy wheel vehicle mechanic.

Growing up I love working on cars and repairing things so this was a great fit for me, now I live on the second floor of my barracks it was mainly all blacks.

On the first floor were the Puerto Ricans and Caucasians, the third floor was where the women live, and the fourth floor was for the officers.

My company was always getting into mess when I got there it was some kind of racial thing going on between the Puerto Ricans and Caucasians they were fighting each other they was into beef all the time.

Mostly everyone in my company was either a drug addict or an alcoholic I am talking about the men but we also had some females who could drink a man under the table.

We had people who use to shoot heroin every day I am telling you my company was something else, but this was the life of living overseas in the military.

Every weekend, what I would enjoy about living overseas was if you were off from duty or work, you would have so many options to choose from, for relaxation and pleasure; my roommates were Larry and Patrick Fitzgerald and they both were from Newport News Virginia.

I had many more friends who were from there as well, we became real close to each other, and we were always going somewhere.

Larry had a Volkswagen, so he pretty much knew his way around, we also had a company bus that use to take the troops to work.

We worked at a refiner, an old German refiner that belongs to Adolf Hitler, this refiner has a two and a half mile track that goes around it. This is where we would test all the vehicles that we repaired; we made fun out of it of course.

We would race each other whenever the time presented itself. They had all kind of underground tunnels it had an eerie feeling there.

Now this refiner was in the heart of Stuttgart, an American army installation right across the street was a German army base and our guards would be looking at them, and their guards would be doing the same thing to us, looking to see what each other were doing.

On the Weekends, the company bus would load up anyone from our unit, men and women and take us to places like the Black Forest, it is a wooded mountain region located in southwestern Germany. Its name derives from the large stands of fir trees that are found on its upper slopes.

We would also go on all kind of tours to these huge castles and take tours to see how royalty live; we would also visit the wine cellars. They offer you to drink from their private stock and of course, you would have brunch as well while you are there. This was a great experience to take part in.

Eventually I got my license I felled the first time I took the test, their driving requirements, as you know are very different, and did you know?

One of their mandatory requirements is that you have to have a fire extinguisher in your vehicle at all-times and flares, reflectors as well.
So you all ready know I had to drive on the autobahn; Germany has a highly developed transportation system including a limited-access superhighway known as the autobahn.

There is no speed limit on the autobahns, this is a dream come true for me driving on this autobahn everyone is driving in the hundreds you’l get a ticket for driving slow on this superhighway.

I would visit the Mercedes-Benz line of automobiles. In Stuttgart Germany, this is where the manufacturer Bayerische Motoren Werke AG (BMW), also known as Bavarian Motor Works, began building automobiles.

The joy of living in Germany I will never every forget, I must say my girl friend Gabrielle and I would explore many places as well as this young lady who was really smart she was fluent in five different languages.

She had her own apartment when I met her she was twenty-one years old, she drove a Mercedes Benz her father was a doctor I cannot recall what her mother did for a living.

She all ways wanted to go to the clubs where ever they had (GI’S) American soldiers she would want to be there, to be honest I was too slow for her, I was so green when it came down to women for a long time.

One night Gabrielle and I decided to go to Sindelfingen this city is outside of Stuttgart about a forty-five minute ride from the barracks now picture this.

It is snowing hard this particular night when we get there, the club is semi pack this was a nice club it remind me of studio 54 in New York.

Gabrielle and I had a dance or two and a few drinks when she asked me would I be able to make it back to the barracks from where we are I was taken by surprise for her to be asking me this, what was she doing was she dumping me right there on the spot. She left me that night for another GI I told you I was slow I was not moving fast enough for her she was trying to get married and relocate to the states that was her main objective.

Now I am lost didn’t have any idea where I’m at, I walked out of the club it’s snowing so hard you can hardly see your hands in front of you the snow is up to my knees I just started walking hoping that someone would stop to give me a ride.

Some one stopped it’s a cream colored Mercedes Benz the passenger door opens up I get in, this guy asks me do I need a lift and of course I said yes that I need to get to panzer barracks and I asked him was he familiar with the place and he said he would take me there.

We took off; I did not know where we were going I had to take his word that he would bring me to the location I had asked.

We were having small talk he was telling me how he likes American GI men, I did not think anything of it because black men in Germany are treated like kings.

While he is driving, I am trying to read the road signs my German is not very good but I know enough to manage.

I only had about two weeks of head start, its training for all new arrivals on how to speak and understand the language, and to know how to count the (Dutch mark) money.

Back to the story, upon me reading the signs I am still not sure if we are going in the right direction or not. Then out of know where we pull in this nice exclusive neighborhood and this garage door just open up he had an automatic garage opener now this was 1980 way before I was hip to automatic door openers.

He pulls in this garage so fast I’m asking him what’s going on he’s telling me it want take long I’m asking what want take long I’m getting a little nervous.

This person has to be around six four two hundred and forty pounds in his late thirties early forties and I am twenty years old, about one hundred sixty pounds.

We enter this garage they have cases of German Beer stack to the ceiling, now German beer has these tall bottles of beer and they are hard glass bottles.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

He ask me would I like a beer, I accepted a beer, we are still sitting in the car he didn’t even have to get out of the car to reach for the beer that’s how much beer they have in this garage its surrounded the whole garage all this beer.

Out of know where this person grabs me by my neck and kisses me on my cheek. I get defenses because he just disrespected me so I’m cursing him out he’s constantly telling me he likes American (GI) so about this time I know I am in trouble I start praying to myself because I am getting ready to kill for the first time.

I had all ready contemplated my plan in my head I was going to hit him in the head with the same bottle of beer that he gave me I was going to hit him so fast and so many times until he wasn’t going to know what had hit him.

I was young physically fit and brain washed to kill besides I was a train killer at that time.

My plan was to take his car drive it to the closest place I can, get to the barracks, then dump it, and walk the rest of the way, upon me getting ready to carry out my plan a light bulb went off in my head play his game and get myself out of this mess. “Okay.”

So I played on his weakness and my survival skills kicked in I tell him look here let me go back to the barracks and check in and get me some clothes and then I will spend some time with you.

I am scared to death; no one knows where I am, how he or she would ever find me meaning my sister are my friends, and if I kill him what would happen to me if he does not kill me first.

So he is falling for my plan I see him thinking about it, this dude reaches between my legs rub my thigh and said “you come back with me yeah” and of course I tell him yes just let me go get my things.

The garage door opens up and we pull off, I am still scared I am trying the door handle on the sly but the door want open because I was going to jump out and just start running.

So all I can do is pray and wait for the opportunity to make my move.

Everything starts to look familiar we are on the road to my base the snow is still coming down I see the guard post up ahead he pulls up close as he could. He will not be allowed to go any further; he tells me he will wait right down from the guard shack for me, yeah right, the door latches pop up.

I jumped out of that car so fast the guards at the post knew something was wrong. I tried to run, the snow was so deep I fell down. I got up so fast, high step all the way to the guard post and told them what was going on they approach him and he took off in the other direction.

That’s one incident I will never forget I never hitchhiked again in my life and I will never every trust a female to take me somewhere I have no idea of where I am or not familiar with.

After that exciting adventure I started hanging back out with my fellow soldiers we were hitting all the clubs at all the military bases, we had our own little group that always hung out together it was about five men and five women we went everywhere together and we all started dating.

We all chose the one we were attracted to and that is how I started going out with this black chick Shelia nice slim fair complexion babe from Richmond Virginia.

Now I was so crazy for this girl I’m starting to get these feelings I have never experienced before, we would go bowling, go out to dinner, we’ll go dinning all the time we all went to Zürich Switzerland to the Alps skiing together we were all intoxicated trying to ski the only black folks out there.

We all would share each other rooms and hang out, we would have cook outs all the time, it was all ways something to do in Germany all the time I mean all the time.

My sister Kathryn gave me all her cooking supplies I had frying pans too deep fry my foods, I was always cooking for everyone we all had music reel to reels, equalizers, reverb the best music equipment and speakers money can buy.

You have heard about the music equipment you can purchase from Germany, every GI had top of the line music we would have contests to see who music were the loudest.

I also purchased me a nice colored television because I was fascinated with German TV.

We use to have dice games going on every pay day, card games going as well, now on the weekends sometimes we would decide to just stay around the barracks and party the whole company all the alcohol and
beer (hash) and food. I never seen dice games with so much money other then at the casino our dice games had thousands of dollars on the floor at a time whole paychecks.

We also had rations, now rations were handed out every month we were able to purchase liquor, cigarettes', coffee, and tea by the bulk all American of course and this is how the black market was started.

Another hustle we would have is we would gather up all the rations we could get our hands on and then we would go to the commissary and purchase half of gallons of liquor, cigarettes, coffee, and we would sell the items to the Germans.

Of course, we would mark the prices up and double our profit; the people in my company were even stilling weapons. M16 and whatever else they could get their hands on.

I can recall one incident we were out in the field. We would be in the field for thirty or forty days at a time sleeping in tents in the pouring rain or snow, some crazy fool decided he wanted to steal some weapons and mail them to the states, man they did not let us out of the field until whoever was responsible come forward.

Mysteriously the weapons reappeared. Whenever we would come out the field we would get cleaned up, then go out to eat. And maybe catch a movie on some weekends we would go to Tübingen, this is a city in southwestern Germany, in the state of Baden-Württemberg, on the Neckar River, near Stuttgart they would have river raft races we would go and hang out there.

On one occasion, Kathryn, Deedy, and I would run into each other there at the lake. My friends and I were just walking enjoying the sights. When we ran straight into them, that was awesome Deedy would give me this big bottle of wine she was drinking from a straw. This was a humongous bottle, we all had a little small talk, then we all went our separate ways and of course, Kathryn would tell me to be careful.

Sometimes we would take boat rides on the Rhine River, now the Rhine River flows in a northwesterly direction from Switzerland through much of western Germany and The Netherlands into the North Sea.

It is a major European waterway and a pillar of economic development. Its main German tributaries include the Main, Mosel, Neckar, and Ruhr rivers.

The Oder River, along the border between Poland and Germany, runs northward and empties into the Baltic; it provides another important path for waterborne freight.

The Elbe River originates in the Czech mountains and traverses into eastern and western Germany toward the northwest until it empties into the North Sea at the large seaport of Hamburg.

The Danube River connects southern Germany with Austria and Eastern Europe. Since the recent construction of the Rhine-Danube Canal, freight is transported by barge from the North Sea to the Black Sea.

Smaller rivers such as the Neisse and Weser also play a significant role as transport routes. There are several large lakes, including the Lake of Constance (Bodensee) in extreme southwest Germany and the glacial moraine lakes.

I am trying to paint you a picture on how beautiful Germany really is. I thank God for allowing me the opportunity to experience some of the most intriguing places in the world.

It made my military time that more rewarding.

My sister Kathryn would leave me once again she received her orders, I’m thinking she was on her way to Korea if I’m not mistaken, she would leave me all of her cooking utensils and whatever else she thought I would need.

I remember the day she came over to my unit and hugged me and told me to take care of myself, she was off again I was once again by myself I cried that day when she left.

I started hanging with my friend Don who was from my neighborhood he was stationed in Heidelberg (Germany), city in southwestern Germany, in Baden-Württemberg, on the Neckar River, near Mannheim.

How we started hooking up, my company had deployed several mechanics to help at their motor pool, to repair these trucks and that is where I ran into him.

We was there for two weeks repairing trucks and jeeps, they had a backlog on their work performances so we were call in to help them out.
Once I got there we went straight to work from sun up to sun down, I remember one time I had to take a transmission out of this truck six times in one day.

Every time I put the transmission into this vehicle the front sill would leak oil, I got so frustrated, but I could not leave until I got the leak stopped, while I was under the truck working my roommate and I. Who also is my sergeant and a good friend of mine (Larry) we were trying to finish when Don walked up and started talking, and that is when I rolled out on the creeper because the voice sounded very familiar.

To my surprise, it was Don we started talking for a little while. He then wanted to know when I would get through; I told him as soon as we can get this transmission to line up and stop leaking.

He offer me to stay with him and his wife while I was stationed at their base, and of course I accepted his offer he told me he had an errand to run and that he would be back to get me in a little while.

We would finally get the truck in service. In addition, be done for the night until tomorrow and then we will have more trucks to complete.

Don came back as he said he would I told Larry and the rest of the fellows that I will see them later, I would stay with Don for the remainder of the time that I would be stationed at their base.

He had a nice apartment he had a little boy and his high school sweetheart he married they were all from the neighborhood where I grew up (Kennedy Heights).

I really enjoyed myself with him and his family everything was so surreal I am on the other side of the world and I am meeting people I had grown up with that’s pretty awesome don’t you think?

Don would get his orders to leave Germany we would get together one more time before his departure, once Don left for the states I was on my own again.

You see Don was always around for me as well, he had a reputation for fighting he was always knocking someone completely out, and he would always check people if he thought they had gotten out of the way with me or anyone else he would be with.

That was Don; I would miss him a great deal as well, I would begin to focus more with my fellow soldiers where I am stationed. Panzer, besides we had everything on base, we had a nice club that we would go to on the weekends, it would be our complete little crew, we did everything together, and wherever we went, we went together.

I started getting restless and home sick I was thinking about going home on leave, I told my girl friend my plans, and she was thinking about going home herself so we all agree. However, before we would go we all decided to go to Paris, they were having a bus ride leaving the following week you remember I told you there was all ways something to do in Germany?

Well this was another one of those times. When we arrived in Paris, we were pretty wasted from drinking all day. All we did there was walk around a little bit took a few pictures ate at a nice café, took in the sights we also got on the extensive subway system known as the Métro, a high-speed commuter train network known as RER (Réseau Express Régional) links inner and outer Paris.

The hub of Paris’s subway system is at the Châtelet–les Halles station, where several Métro lines and the east-west and north-south RER lines meet. Millions of people use the Métro or RER every day.

This place reminds you of Penn station in New York City and the port of authority.

Pâris is also known as the “City of Lights” for its world-renowned beauty and charm. Paris is the most visited city in the world, with more than 30 million visitors per year.

About 55 percent of visiting tourists come from foreign countries, mainly Britain, the United States, Germany, Italy, and Japan. The Eiffel Tower and the Louvre are the most visited sites in Paris.

Once we got back to Germany, it was time to say our goodbyes, my girl, and I had a nice night, the next morning we all went to the mess hall to eat breakfast, after breakfast we all smoked out, got our drink on, and then headed out in different directions.

I would fly out of Stuttgart International into Zürich, city in northern Switzerland, capital of Zürich Canton, on the Lake of Zürich The largest city in the country; we would have a two-hour layover before I board this humonous jumbo 747 first class flight to the states.
When I got off the plane in Switzerland it was time to go through customs, this is where they check your luggage and sometimes strip search you, now keep in mind this was before 911.
I was told to follow the custom officer I guess because I was young looking. I was by myself and I am dress like GQ that was the style then. They put me in this little room that looked like a dressing room in a department store they had two armed officers on each side of me carrying M15 submachine guns, I was told to take all my clothes off, now I am getting nervous why?
Because my dumb ass wanted to take back some heroin and some hash. Moreover, so my friends can see what it’s hitting like over here across the world.
Luck was in my favor, because they never would find it, I had it tape to the bottom of my feet and they never asked me to raise my feet up to take off my socks.
After I was able to leave, I would proceed to go to the Chocolate Factory and get all kinds of Swiss chocolates to take home with me.
It really did not dawn on me that I could have jeopardized my whole career and life for that matter. I guess when I was young I did not have a conscience.
Once I was through shopping it was time to leave Switzerland, I boarded the 747 airplane nonstop to Denver Colorado where I would catch another plane into New Orleans.
The flight was very comfortable, this was my first time riding first class this plane had an upstairs lounge, loveseats a nice movie projector screen, recliner seats, I really enjoyed that flight so much I ordered me a couple of drinks, to relax and enjoy my window seat.
About Nine hours later, we were entering Denver International Airport, we skidded off the runway upon our approach to landing it was a scary ordeal, and they had ice on the runway that was the reason for us skidding.
No one was injured just a little shaken up. After we had all cleared the plane it was time to go through the process all over again with customs, only this time it wouldn’t be so bad I did not have to get stripped search, all they did in customs was looked in my luggage and told me to have a nice connecting flight to my final destination.
It is always interesting trying to find your way around the airport terminals; it is as you are in a maze trying to get out. My connecting flight was to leave in thirty minutes after I had gotten off the flight from Switzerland. Luckily the flight was delayed because of the runway incident, on my way to my terminal I ran into the Denver Nuggets Basketball team also going through the terminal I did not realized how tall those guys are until I saw them up close.
New Orleans, Louisiana here I come home sweet home!
Going home on leave

The day I left for the states for a little (R&R) recreation and relaxation, it was 1980 fly now pay later, that was one of the privileges the military had for the troops who were overseas and I must say some of us took advantage of this, you could fly anywhere in the world and pay later.

“Oh” the army would get their money they would take a little bit out of your checks each month or every two weeks, it was up to the individual how he wanted to pay.

Once I got off the airplane from Denver, to New Orleans that was another three and half hour flight I caught a taxicab home.

The cab ride was a flat rate that was twenty five dollars; I gave the driver thirty dollars, it was a nice day when I arrived around one thirty in the afternoon, the neighborhood looked different for some reason whenever you leave home and then come back it looks totally different.

Everyone that I use to hang out with was gone, they were in the military or they had enrolled in college, Bennie had enrolled into Southern University with a couple more of my friends some went off to Grambling University as well.

Doing the time I was home, I spent time with my nephew Lamond, I had asked Greg to bring me to the department store so that I may buy my nephew a motorize motorcycle.

I always wanted one of them for myself but they did not come out until I was much older. That was my goal to purchase my nephew one, I found one it was blue and silver I had to also get the charger for it, it was separate and I had to have it because I wanted him to be able to ride as soon as possible.

Once we got it charge and put all the decals on the machine it was time for him to ride I would take him outside and he would just enjoy riding, which was an awesome feeling for me. To see his beautiful smile, Lamond would always ride his motorcycle he had a compartment on the bike under his seat where he would store everything,

My nephew love chicken he thought everything was chicken, Popeye’s chicken, one day they had this odor in the house, and we did not know where it was coming from.

The smell was in the house for days, we would all be watching television are just sitting around the house and this smell would just take over our senses, one day we finally found what was causing this awful smell it was coming from Lamond motorcycle, he had hidden a chicken leg in the compartment of his seat. Man, when we raised that seat up you would have thought that smell could not get any worse. “Wow” that was one of those times my mother, Greg and I would share together we would reminisce on that one encounter for quite some time.

You see I love my nephews and my nieces as if they are my kids you will see as the story goes on.

While I was home I shared the drugs that I had with some of my neighborhood associates, I would ask Greg for the use of his car, I would hang out at the Crash Landing.

This was a 747 airplane that they made into a club in Metairie, now this city is also call fat city and it always has been a racist town so you kind of had to be alert at all times this is the city of David Duke the former Grand Wizard of the Klu Klux Klan.

The car happens to break down on me, with two of my friends. Right around the corner from the club in this white neighborhood and it is around twelve thirty at night I am under the hood trying to fix this car everybody is getting paranoid because we are illegal and I am clean I have on my gear from Europe.

Therefore, since I was troubleshooting and diagnosing problems in the army, I rather knew what I was doing so I shaved the points, the car cranks up, and we are off back to the house.
There was really know one to kick it with at home any more, I gave Greg eighty dollars to purchase me a gram of cocaine I would stay around the house, and wait on him to come back, it took him forever to get back I knew something was not right, I chilled with Lamond and looked after him.

When Greg finally came back, he told me that he had misplaced the money, now I was disappointed with him, but I still whined up giving him more money to go again, how stupid I was.

It was really a waste of time and money to come back home because I mean there was nothing going on at home my mother was working Kathryn was in Korea and Claudette was in Norfolk Virginia and my father was where ever he was.

I was not interested in any particular girl, because I had my thing going on back in Germany, not to say that I did not advantage of the opportunity when it presented itself.

Thanks to my Nephew and of course seeing my mother, the visit was well worth all the money I had blew in a thirty-day period. Not counting the first class flight I took from Germany to Switzerland to Denver, Colorado, then to New Orleans.

Before I would leave to return to Germany I had promise my friends that I would bring back all the latest music, so I would get a friend of mine to hip me to all the up to date music that was in at the time.

Because everything we were getting was old, so it would be nice to have all the latest music before anyone else, so my friend his name is Michael also we all went to school together, he drove a 1973 cutlass it was gold he had nice rims on it, it was decent.

He would offer to take me to a nice record store off Canal Street. Once we got there, they had this nice female receptionist who was nice she was Caucasian and very sweet, I just did not have the time to pursue her she helped me out with my music purchases, I would spend one hundred and fifty dollars on music.

This was when Dianna Ross came out with Upside Down, I paid for the albums, and we were on our way home.

After that outing with Michael, I heard that he went to prison for twelve years I have not seen or heard anything from him since.

It was getting close for me to return to duty. Before I was to leave I wanted to take back some marijuana, because they don’t have weed over there in German this would be a big come up, so I purchase me a quarter pound of weed to take back with me, I knew they were going to love this because this was top of the line red bud.

Now after all that I had been through with customs getting over here to the states and almost being caught, I was sure as hell playing with fire trying to bring drugs into another country.

Please don’t get discourage with my stupidity I was young and ignorant at the time, do not get upset with me are look at me any different it was all part of me becoming the man I am today.

I had purchased me a pinstriped suit to take with me and upon purchasing my suit it came in a garment bag

A traveling bag for easy carrying, this was perfect for me to do what I was thinking.

I decided to use the suit to put my contraband in. Once I got back to the house I began to put ounces of marijuana into the suit in the inside pocket of the jacket, and also in the vest, once I got everything situated, I put the suit in the bag, zipped it up, and I hoped like hell that it would not get notice.

It was time to leave home once again, destination Germany, only this time I was going to be doing things a little bit different.

The day when it was time to leave I kissed my mother good-bye. I told ever one to take care, Greg and I, my brother-in-law was off to, New Orleans, Louisiana international airport. When I arrive at the airport, it
was time to check my luggage in. I was catching a flight out of New Orleans to La Guardia Airport, in New York State, that would take me to one of London’s main airport, Heathrow.

This Airport is among the world’s busiest international airports. Once I got to the counter the receptionist asked me how many pieces of luggage were I checking in, I told her I had my duffle bag and a garment bag, she gave me a special box to put my garment bag in, it was a Delta box for garment bags.

When the receptionist offer me this I knew I was home free, I said my goodbyes with Greg and begin to board my flight once I got situated on the plane I order me a gin an orange juice kick back and started listen to some music.

When we arrived at La Guardia international four hours later, it was time to fuel up and pick up, and drop off more passengers.

It was time to finally go across the Atlantic Ocean, of course I had a window seat every time that I fly I have a window seat, “I fly know other way.”

This would be one of the worst flights that I every flew in my life, my ears would pop all the way their I cried from the pain my ears would hurt so bad the stewardess would try and give me cotton to put in my ears.

She would also give me gum to chew, and aspirins nothing seem to work I could not sleep for the pain.

I was miserable for the whole eight hours and a half that it took to cross the Atlantic Ocean.

Once I got to London, everything was good I went through customs it was home sweet home, I boarded a smaller plane for Stuttgart, Germany.

I had already told my roommates when I would be back and they had promised me that they would be there to pick me up and I was sure counting on them to be there.
Back to my European experience

Back in Germany once again, to my surprise they were there waiting on me, both of my roommates Larry and Patrick.

Once we retrieved my Luggage from the baggage claim, it was on to the base where we resided. Panzer barracks in Boblingen, Germany.

My friends were glad to have me back. Now I do not know if they were happy to see me, are if they were just excited to see what goody’s I had brought back for them.

We had small talk on the way to the barracks getting caught up on everything that has been going on, they told me that my girl had made it back also, once we got to our destination I had began to unpack my bags to retrieve my presents for everybody.

For Larry it was the music because he loved his music and he was very grateful for all the new music I had purchased, that he would eventually attained from me.

Larry started playing the albums ASAP, he would crank up the volume at a nice level, and you know what that did?

Everyone started their journey to see where the music was coming from, after everyone realized the music was coming from room 207 they knew I was back in town.

Before long, everyone would be in our room, reading the album covers and asking how was my trip.

My female friend was back from visiting her family as well her and all her girl friends came by the room, it was just like old times back with the crew.

Now the timing was right for me to surprise everyone with the marijuana, this would be the first time attempting to retrieve my contraband.

I am not sure if it made it or not, I am excited. No one knows anything so if it is not here no sweat, someone just would have clipped me, charge it to the game.

I retrieve the garment bag and begin to rip the box open that it was in. Once I have it open I immediately go, straight to the inside pockets.

No one is paying me any attention; everyone is still reading the album covers and dancing around having a good time.

I located what I was hoping to find, once I did, I threw an ounce to Patrick, and he caught it in mid air smiling from ear to ear.

I told him to get busy, I had also purchased a box of one point fives rolling papers.

Now all the attention have shifted back my way, I’m pulling out two and a half more ounces of weed, my girl gets one for her to do whatever she wants to do with it.

She gives me a very long passionate kiss. A very long passionate kiss, and whisper in my ear that she cannot wait to get me alone.

Her girl friends saying damn yawl cannot wait until we leave. Yawl makes me sick.

Now do not forget no one has weed over here in Germany, and my friends haven’t smoked in a while and this is as good as it gets, everyone is buzzing feeling real good.

We all decided to go out to get something to eat, we didn’t want to go to the mess hall, so we decided on meatball subs at the bowling alley, and so upon us securing everything and putting it in separate places for safe keeping.

Everyone was heading for the door we were going to walk across the base to the bowling alley, once everyone cleared the door, Shelia immediately close the door behind them, and told them to bring us something back and to take their time getting back.
Michael's Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Man that was hilarious, my partners understood very well what was going on, and Sheila girl friends knew as well, we all got a good laugh out of that. I will remember that experience.

Sheila and I had a nice relationship, it was not a serious one, and we never made plans to spend the rest of our lives together I guess we were both just passing the time together like everyone else did in the military.

One of the females in our crew got pregnant and decided to get an article eight that is getting a maternity discharge from the army.

We would miss Beverly a lot, she was fun to be around we would go dancing; I would kill them on the dance floor doing my thing I was a good dancer.

Eventually we would get over our lost and back into the groove of things, the word was out that I had the weed, now I also started having hash, lots of it, I would buy plates of hash for six hundred dollars and make every bit of my money back and more.

Everyone was smoking some pills that you crushed up in cigarettes I would purchase these pills by the bottles and flip them as well.

These pills will get you so high, now everyone was crazy for these pills, the price were four dollars for one; I am selling all of this poison. My “ignorance”

I did not need the money are anything I guess it was the notoriety that it brought with it, all the attention, I am thinking, “I required wanting to be seen and wanting the attention from my father.” My father would take me to his clubs, and walk in the door and buy drinks for the whole club, no matter how many people were in there.

Everyone loved my father to be in there company and I guess I loved everything that selling drugs was doing for me.

I started meeting all kind of people, people would just show up from different companies.

It was this beautiful Caucasian young woman we call her goldilocks because her long gold locks, she was so fine, I had never seen such a beautiful creature of that color before.

There were times when I would see her on the base, are at a company function but I never knew if she was in the military or not.

There were also sometimes I would see her with fatigues on but I never seen her with rank showing on her uniform, now I was very attracted to this female every time that I would see her she did something to me, this feeling would come over me, you had to see this beautiful person.

I got hurt at work one day, while working using this ratchet to tighten up this transmission underneath this five-ton truck.

The ratchet slipped and hit me right above my eyebrow, my sergeant thought I should go to medical, once I got there the medic put a couple of stitches on my wound and told me to take the pain pills that he was going to prescribe, and he also told me to take three days off from work.

About the second day, I was off in the barracks laid up just chilling watching television. When someone knocked at the door. To my surprise it was her goldilocks now I was rather thrown when she appeared in front of me. Now you must understand I had never talked to her, and no one knew how I felt about her. Because I kept my inner thoughts to myself, this was just my little twisted fantasy how I would fanaticize about hooking up with this beautiful creature.

And here she is at my door, she would give me this beautiful smile, I immediately open the door for her to enter, once she enter I closed the door behind her and she asked me did I have any x pills, now these are the pills I told you earlier that these pills had everyone going crazy.

I was surprise that she knew who I was, she knew my name, and she said she had been watching me for a while, I would offer her a drink, and we kept all kinds of liquor in the room we use to have liquor for breakfast.

She asked for some gin and orange juice, and I had one for myself. We began by talking a little small talk she said she wanted to buy some pills and I told her that her money was no good here.
Michael's Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

I asked her if she wanted to smoke one, and of course she would say yes, that’s when I gave her about three pills for her to take with her, she asked me when would my roommates be back, I told her about four thirty, and now it’s about ten in the morning.

She started getting a little more relaxed now that she have found out that no one will come by.

I can see she was a little nervous. Hell, I was nervous as well. But I wouldn’t let her know, I asked her if she wanted to smoke some hash and she said yes, so I pull my bowl out, loaded it up with some hash and then I pull out some weed and she was like I haven’t smoked weed in a long time, where did you get marijuana from?

We started getting a nice buzz, she asked me to put some music on, so I would put on this album, I cannot think of the artist but the song goes like this. "Walking down the street-watching ladies, go by watching you." Maybe you know who the artist is?

Once I put the music on the atmosphere changes. She starts to dance and taking off her clothes slowly. Then she points at me, give me this seductive looked and tells me to come there, as I walk up to her she grabs me by my collar and pulls me to her and kisses me and starts to gyrate all over me, this is like a dream come true.

We would eventually become secret lovers for the duration of my time in Germany.

Michael and Linda that was her real name but I loved calling her Goldilocks, and she also loved me to call her that, now she was in the 110 unit and they were across the base and her unit stay in the filed a lot thirty and forty days at a time.

She would finally (ETS) expiration of term of service with an honorable discharge she was in way before me.

Goldilocks was planning to make Germany her home like most GI’s did. Germany was a very nice place to live, I was really contemplating on staying as well, she would later ask me to stay with her, she had gotten her on place and she would come by and pick me up.

I found out that her father was a General and they had a home in the countryside that is why the transition was easy for her to make.

Shelia would soon find out about my escapades with goldilocks, now she wants to get serious about our relationship, I am just trying to have fun in life.

I am already into a relationship with Teresa who is in New Jersey, my father’s’ girl friend daughter; we have made promises to be together once I get out of the military.

We have been together for a long time it was a long distance relationship but she was mine whenever I was there, and that would be quite often.

I maintain my relationships with all my female friends, and I made time to hang out with the fellows and to peddle my drugs and go to work every day.

Now the fellows and I wound venture off sometimes by ourselves without the females, we heard about this poof house, let me explain what poof houses in Germany are.

First, the word poof is used to “express contempt, disdain, or disapproval.”

Picture a high-rise Holiday Inn five to six stories high nice and clean, okay. Now I am going to take you on a ride that I would not get off until I leave Germany.

The fellows and I would get our buzz on and then go to the poof house, my first experience was amazing keep in mind I am twenty years old.

The poof house is located in downtown Stuttgart they started calling me downtown Brown.

Once we get there, we all go In, I did not know what to expect, one of my friends knew his way around pretty good, we went straight to the elevator banks and went two the second floor.

Now on this floor every room had a sign right above the entrance that identified the nationality of the occupant.

Each room had these beautiful exotic women in them with nice lingerie on and high heels.

The higher floors you would go on the more exotic it would become, you had women from all over the world now this was a young man’s dream.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Every room I would pass had a beautiful women in it I did not see anything that was not nice. My friends and I decided that they wanted me to go and try out the merchandisé. My first choice would be this woman from Czechoslovakia, Once I enter the room she asked me to close the door behind me, and then she asks me what would I like to do. Keep in mind this is all new to me I am green to this, I told her that I wanted to do everything and anything.

This went on every chance I would get, that would be quite often, my goal was to experience women from every lifestyle and every corner of the world.

All the women were required to wear protection. You could not participate if you did not want to wear protection.

Now some of the women wanted money and some wanted American cigarettes, others wanted liquor, once we found this out, it was on and popping, these women were very clean, everything is clean in Europe nudity is widely open in Europe.

You can watch the news and see a nude weather girl. This was very common there.

I would start this venture by myself, I would have every nationally women I can have, that was my goal, and so it was, they would be from places like Egypt.


Now this is a very nice place to visit as well Egypt, officially the Arab Republic of Egypt (Jumhūriyat Misr al-Arabiyyah in Arabic), country in northeastern Africa and southwestern Asia. Most of the country lies in Africa, but the easternmost portion of Egypt, the Sinai Peninsula, is usually considered part of Asia; it forms the only land bridge between the two continents. Most of Egypt’s terrain is desert, divided into two unequal parts by the Nile River. The valley and delta of the Nile are the main centers of habitation. The capital and largest city is Cairo.


Now some of the most beautiful women I encounter were from South America, Peru, Colombia, Ecuador, the Dominican Republic also have some of the most beautiful women I have encounter.

There are so many I can go on and on, I just wanted to paint a picture for you, of the world’s most exotic women that I have had, “it’s a guy thing.”

I have not even begun to tell you about the Asian Women, Japanese, and Chinese women, or the women in India, or the women in the Congo or Turkey.

Now Turkey has some places you can go too and sit in smoke clubs, and smoke hash all night and it is not against the law.

Besides my escapades at the poof houses, my friends and I would find another spot that was also exciting.

Nude beaches, acres of beach with nude women as far as the eye can see, I was like a kid in the candy store, now you are not allow to have cameras because it’s against the law to take pictures there, I can understand that, but you know me by now right?

I would sneak my camera in and began to take pictures. I would take pictures of all these women lying around on blankets butt naked. My boys were tripping they are just looking. I made my way to a couple of red heads sitting there putting sun tan lotion on themselves and I politely introduced myself to them. I extended my hand and asked them may I be of some assistant to them.

Immediately they started smiling.

I knew I was in then, one of the red heads gave me the lotion and I started rubbing the lotion on her taking my time I am tripping they are naked as a jay bird only if my boys in the states can see me now.

Once I finish applying lotion on the both of them, I started polishing their toenails, we got comfortable, I loved their beautiful accent it was very sexy.
Michael’s Life Time Memories
By Michael Brown

We talked and laugh and was enjoying each other company when my friends was ready to go, and I definitely was not ready to go and the girls since that I wasn’t ready to go and they told me that they would bring me to the barracks when they were finish with me.

The fellows asked me was I sure and of course I said yes, that I was cool, how quickly I have for gotten about the experience that I had with the German guy, who tried to have his way with me when I first arrived here in Germany, riding with strangers even if the strangers are beautiful women.

My friends who I came with were just looking at me I’m trying to tell them to get a couple of pictures before they leave and to leave me a bottle of wine.

The women over there are very friendly and enjoyable to be around I really enjoyed my stay in Germany.

Now that my friends are gone, we continue to enjoy each other company by drinking and taking in the sights of this beautiful place.

Now Rosa was about 5’10 her figure was around 28-24-30 nice German red head with freckles. And then there was Gail now Gail was this big Amazon she had to be at least 6, 1 or six two and her figure was 26-24-36 you would call her a brick house, and she also had red hair and you can tell that they were nature red heads with freckles’.

As the evening starts to settled in, we decided it was time to leave we were thinking about going to a pub, but Rosa had a better idea, she asked Gail to take me home with them, that they were going to cook a nice German cuisine, and If I would like to come for dinner with them. In addition, I told them that I would love to come over for dinner.

Once we got to their home, a nice home that reminded me of our townhomes that we have in the states, it was a two-story apartment very chic in the inside.

We had a nice meal that they prepare while I was rolling up something to smoke, looking through a photo album, once we finish our meal I had no idea where the night was headed. However, to my surprise, it was in my favor.

After our night of wild sex, I awaken to a nice brunch the next morning, and then they took me to the base, gave me their number, and told me to stay in touch. This is what happens in Germany with American black men. You are treated like a king!

However, you know all good things must end.

I also had some more adventures’ that was not so bright I really was into living life in the fast lane as long as I can remember.

It seems like this lifestyle would follow me everywhere I would go, it really started when I was in junior high school.

I was into Fast cars, fast women, and money, and drugs, and partying. Some stories I am afraid to write about because of the statue of limitations.

I am going to be getting ready to leave Germany, I just have one more story I would like to share with you.

Back at the barracks, this time we were partying down the hall on the same floor but a different room, the rooms are big, keep in mine.

The girls are frying chicken and dancing to the music the guys have a huge dice game going, we have a room full, it’s the whole crew tonight we are all enjoying each other, you have bowls of hash going around you have weed and alcohol everywhere.

They even have shooting galleries where you have people shooting heroin.

The night was wild and this happen to be New Years Eve, now the fellows had just hit a lick we had M16 and grenades and gas masks in the room, ready for the black market, line up all against the walls.

Everybody is pretty much wasted and having a good time getting ready for the countdown, when there is a knock at the door we have this secret knock that no one knows but the click.

We never let the females answer the doors, after the knock on the door one of the fellows’ immediately ran to open the door, soon as he opens the door, get on the floor! MP’S rushed in yelling get on the floor!

Page 61 of 188
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Everyone is in shock they hand cuff all of us, men and women they retrieved all the drugs, the stolen weapons, and then they took us all to the stockade.

Now stockade is an enclosure usually surrounded by barbed wire in which prisoners are kept.

They kept us at the stockade until they took us to jail where the German police also had questions for us.

We had threats of prison time if we did not tell them what they wanted to know, because at this time many weapons were being stolen from the base.

I can recall the police telling me that they were going to send me away, for nine and half years to Mannheim prison to do hard labor if I did not comply with what they wanted me to tell them. They eventually let us go at least, all of us who did not live in the room.

Now the ones who live in the room would get charge and they got prison time, which was the end of their career in the military.

The rest of us got articles and restricted to the base for two weeks with extra duty scrubbing the floors, with a toothbrush.

Once we got off restriction.

It was time to grind every time you look we had some kind of an assignment to do they kept us pretty occupy close to the base, we either had flag detail, or guard duty, they were even having late night drills I really think this was to make sure that we were in our rooms.

I had this sergeant on my back all the time, he would always come around to check on me, he really had my best interest at heart, he helped me to enroll in a printer ship program with the university of Maryland.

As time went on things began to loosen up, I would slow down with the drugs and hanging out with everyone who was into the black marketing.

All my trouble was with everyone who I was hanging within the military, “bad boys” In my company and the surrounding companies.

That is when I started going back to the poor house, I still had my girl Shelia and Goldilocks, and I also had Rosa and Gail, now you would figure with all of them that I would be satisfy.

I never was satisfied I guess it was in my blood because the Brown men are something else in my family. Everyone that I know has women on the side and I was raise thinking that is what a man does.

That is not what a real man does I found out the hard way and for all those I hurted alone the way I am truly sorry.

Another experience of a lifetime was when my crew and I went to the Oktoberfest.

Munich, south central Germany, the capital of Bavaria, on the Isar River. This festival attracts many tourists with great breweries from the entire world.

They come to promote their fine beers, this is an awesome event everybody is tipsy and having a good time, people from all over the world, eating and drinking sampling beer, and food, and don’t mention the women, I am not going to even attempt to tell you about that.

Use your imagination it is like a World’s Fair only this one is promoting alcohol with beautiful women from all parts of the world. People would also visit Munich Germany because of its elegant shops, fashionable nightclubs, and lively festivals. A nearby international airport and a network of railroads and highways connect Munich with the rest of Germany and other cities of Europe.

I would always end up somewhere that some kind of life experience would take place this time in 1980 a-bomb planted by a member of a neo-fascist group exploded at Munich’s Oktoberfest celebration, killing 14, and injuring 215 others.

This was a scary thing we were right there when this happen, we had just came out of one of the beer tents when the bomb went off.

Automatically we hit the ground, we didn’t know if we were under attack or what, everyone was screaming and pointing we observed something so horrible, you thought it was a dream how could this be happening?
A tour bus with lots of people on it exploded, body parts mangle the entire place where the bus was parked waiting on its passenger.

We were immediately escorted back to our bases, every military personnel. We were place on high alert until they gather enough information to know what was going on.

No military personnel would leave their base at any time until the alert was lifted.

I must say when there are a crisis that occurs overseas our military is a thing of beauty, how sufficient and well organize they are.

Back at the barracks life goes on, going from room to room getting high, going to the movies are bowling, are dancing going out to the clubs on base.

We were always having Bar-B-Q ‘S, so being restricted to the base was not very bad.

This particular night everything changed. It had to be around two thirty in the morning. We had a full-scale alert where you have to hurry up get dress and go down stairs to the ground floor, which was the basement where supply and the armor were located.

This is where you give the supply clerk your number for your assigned gear and then you would do the same at the armor to get your weapon.

Once you receive your gear, you would go to the designated area to be counted and given your orders to move out in addition, whatever destination it was.

On this night how every, I had just gotten in from the club we had sneaked out, I had just gotten into bed I am high, so high, when the alarm was call.

I am struggling with all my gear it’s crowded everybody is trying to retrieve their gear, when I drop my gas mask on one of my sergeants spit shine jump boots.

This sergeant starts yelling at me cursing me out calling me all kind of names, out of know where I drop all my gear, and punched him in his jaw.

My friends pull me off him and he is telling me that he is going to write me up; everyone is trying to calm the situation down before the captain or lieutenant comes.

Now this sergeant is about six three two fifty pounds and he was new to the outfit but we accepted him in our crew we all use to hang together.

Everyone tried to talk him out of reporting the incident, but he could not get over the fact that I had went in his shit.

I could not believe I did what I did as well.

The next day I was call into the (CO) office. (CO, mean, the commanding officer.

Once I enter the captains office I stood at attention until he told me at ease, when he told me that I would receive an article thirteen.

Now an article thirteen is when you lose rank, and money, and receive extra duty, and get restricted to your quarters. I had just made specialist four; now I am getting my rank reduce to E-2.

After that, I was being picked on from the upper ranks quite often.

Until they finally persuaded me to bail out with an honorable discharge with the option that I can turn around and come right back in, but I would be banned from every coming back to Germany.

I had thirty days to get out of Germany, so I was rushed to be cleared, this is where you have to go and turn all your gear in, and sign off on this and that.

This was a bitter sweet time I was ready to go and then I wasn’t but, they pressured me so bad that I really didn’t have a chance, my life in the military would have been rough from then on.

Once I cleared out it was time to leave Germany I had made rounds to visit with all of my friends and spent a little time with them, not every one of them wanted me to leave.

I eventually caught a flight out, next stop Fort Jackson South Carolina that is located in Columbia City. Columbia city is in central South Carolina, South Carolina is in the southeastern United States, bordering the Atlantic Ocean.

Now Fort Jackson was a large infantry-training base for the United States Army.
This was also, where Kathryn went to basic training; I want to say Claudette as well but do not quote me on that one.

My stay was not long at fort Jackson, I want speak on this time. Nevertheless, after my stay in South Carolina, it was time for home sweet home.

Once again, I am going back to New Orleans.
My observation

Once I had gotten back home, things seem to be different, it is in the early eighties, my Mother and Greg, and Lamond was the only one at home, Claudette was still in Norfolk Virginia and my mother was working all the time, and Kathryn was in Korea, but never the least I was happy to be home. One of the highlights was that the economy was doing fine, it seems like everyone is working and enjoying life, and the neighborhood seems to be thriving quite well, in 1980 the growth of conservatism led to Ronald Reagan’s victory.

Reagan vowed to stimulate the economy by implementing what was called supply-side economics, a theory that tax cuts would spur economic growth, and therefore increase government revenues.

Reagan also promised to cut government. “Government is not the solution to the problem,” he declared. “Government is the problem.”

I actually voted for Ronald Reagan in my opinion I think he was great with foreign policy he was a strong leader and he also believed in keeping a strong military, check this out, During the fall campaign against Democratic President Jimmy Carter, the biggest political issue was the economy.

Reagan blamed Carter for the recession that had begun in 1980 and for increasing inflation. He also accused Carter of weakness in foreign policy and called for a stronger military.

His claim that Carter had a weak foreign policy seemed to be substantiated by a lengthy hostage crisis in Teherān, Iran. In November 1979 after Carter had allowed the deposed shah of Iran to enter the United States for medical treatment, a group of Iranian revolutionaries stormed the U.S. embassy in Teherān and held 53 Americans as hostages.

The United States media publicized the plight of the hostages and Carter’s failure to release them. They were eventually released in January 1981, on the day of Reagan’s inauguration.

The contrast between the television personalities of the two candidates was also very important. Carter's stiff, nervous manner had never been popular, while Reagan's charm and his call for a return to patriotism and traditional morality appealed to the public.

Many voters believed that Reagan was a forceful leader who could restore prosperity at home and prevent national humiliation abroad.

Everyone felt safe knowing that we had a strong leader that every nation feared, these was the best of times this is only my opinion.
Settling down at home

Once I got settle in at home one day I was standing outside in front of the family home when a couple of the neighborhood guys that I knew drove up.

One of the people name was Eddie, now Eddie was driving this brand new black on black Z-28 with t-tops this car was beautiful.

Then there was this other person, his name was Fred, now Fred was driving a brand new Trans am with t-tops, it was grey, and burgundy this car was beautiful.

Then there was Scout, now Scout was also driving a beautiful car, he was driving a brand new Camaro black on black with t-tops.

I am thinking what in the world is going on around here; these are all the same people that I grew up with we all had the muscle cars, now they all have up graded.

So you already know what I was thinking, I had to make me a move as well, I had money saved up from the army, but I didn’t want to jump out there to soon, I already had the family car we still had the Montego that I would drive from time to time.

I decided to get me a job first and accumulate some more finances; my friends would come by every day and ask me what kind of car am I thinking about getting? I really did not know what kind of car I wanted to purchase, I was undecided all I knew was that it would have to have t-tops.

I started working in Crown Point off the river at watts Construction Company, as a pipe fitter helper making good money; this company was located near Jean Lafitte National Historical Park and Preserve, right off of Barataria near Marrero.

I and another one of my friends his name is James we called him Hicks.

Now James was about two are three years older then I, he also was a military veteran very athlete, all the girls was crazy over him, his sister and my oldest sister Claudette was real good friends.

I and James became real close we were always cool because he would always looked out for us growing up, James was also an expert in martial arts, whenever we had problems at school he would come to the school with his boys to handle the situation.

James and I would work all the time we both were on a mission to purchase an automobile, so I would pick him up every morning since he was the one who told me about the job.

Around this time, my brother in law Greg was working for the corps of engineers, or he was selling cars, I really cannot put the period into perspective.

All I knew that he was no longer working for the state department of transportation when I got back home.

We would still hang out and get high together. I would get to travel with Greg a lot; we would drive to his hometown and visit with his family.

Greg is from Greensboro, city in northern North Carolina and seat of Guilford County, near Winston-Salem and High Point; the three cities are known collectively as the Piedmont Triad.

They really lived in High Point, North Carolina, I remember Greg and I would leave late at night and it would take us twelve hours to arrive there.

He would show me all around introduce me to his family these are some of the beautiful things my brother in law and I did together.

I was still working towards buying me a car, but I was not in a rush. My sister had another boy while in Norfolk Virginia, I and Greg would have to leave again to travel fourteen hours to go and pick up my little nephew his name is Lewanye.
Now I have two nephews, we arrived at the navy base, and they were still in the hospital, this was my first time seeing Claudette in a long time; we were to take Lewanye back home with us. Claudette only had a couple of months left in Virginia.

She had her orders to be station in New Orleans, Louisiana Naval Station.

Once we got settled in back at home in New Orleans we all agreed to help out with the kids to give Greg some help, now I thinking, this have to be a very special kind of dude to take care of his kids while his wife is over six hundred miles away, and staying with his in laws.

Can you imagine doing that? Greg was the one who would tell me about this car he had seen at the car dealership, it was a Camaro flex blue, t-tops power windows, and power locks, front and back spoilers. I would go and look at it, I loved the potential that it had, and you see my whole objective was to come out with the cleanest car in the hood.

I decided to go and get Mr. Bush you remember him? My friends father Reginald, I told you he taught me how to work on cars. Well I decided to go and get him to look at the car for me to see if it was worth the money.

Reginald was still in the military, but I would still go by his parents’ house to check on them and Joe, Reginald older brother was now in Germany at the same base I just left, Panzer barracks in Boblingen, Germany.

Mr. Bush and I would arrive at the car lot. He would check the car out; he would ask the sales man to put the car up on the rack. Therefore, he can look underneath, after the inspection he told me that the car was worth it but he did not like the power windows and locks are the t-tops.

My decision was that I would continue to look for something else. I drove him back home.

The next day I and my mother and Greg went back to the dealership and I purchase the car, I told my mother and Greg to go ahead because I was going to get the car detail before I leave and that I would see them at home.

Once I got home, I park the car and continue to drive the Montego to work, I would also start to hustle again, Greg had the weed, and I knew everybody so I would pick up where I left off,

My job would run out at Watts Construction Company, my mother would help me in every way she could, I would eventually get another job this time it was at Avondale Naval Shipyards, as a pipe fitter helper.

I would start tricking my car out slowly. Everyone was coming by wanting me to ride with them, but I was not ready yet to ride with them. I wanted some rims and some nice tires, because all of their cars were factory, I had already visualize my car at its full potential, it was just a matter of time, this car was going to be cleaner then my 68 Camaro and all the other cars.

One day I was just trimming around in the neighborhood when this young woman asked me if I would give her a ride to the bank. She told me that it wouldn’t take long, matter of fact she said just take her through the drive through window, she told me that she was going to take care of me.

Of course I had agreed to honor her request, besides I knew her, she lived in the subdivision over from where we were staying, and I knew her and her bother pretty well they both were older then I.

I decided to take the Camaro out that day. Once we got to the bank. I pull into the drive through window. Received the canister and handed it to her. Then she began to write a check, and then she puts it in the canister, pasted it back to me, I put it through the window while we are waiting, we were having small talk, she is continually talking with me and looking at the bank teller, when the teller asked her a question.

The girl who I have known for a long time started talking in this voice that I have never heard her speak in before, she really startled me, I looked at her, and she gave me a look, like boy play alone.

So I just chilled out to see how this was going to play out, next thing that happen was the canister was coming back out full of cash she told the teller thanks, and to have a nice day, I drove off, she asked me would I stop at the store on the way home. We stopped at Winn Dixie she would purchase a few groceries and as I am driving the girl gives me a roll, she gave me seven hundred dollars.
I could not believe what she had done. She asked me to bring her to get some weed and some cocaine. Of course, I knew where the weed was because we had it. However, I did not deal with everyone on this level, and I knew this girl was dangerous, her and her brother stayed in and out of trouble robbing folks, she probably knew that I had the dope but I would never get on that level with her and she respected it.

Once I finished taking her on her errands, which took about an hour and a half. I would drop her off at her house, I helped her inside with her groceries, her brother came out to help with the bags as well, he was happy to see me while we were inside, and they ran the scoops down to me they were into stolen checks.

Now I am tripping, but should have known nothing comes this easy, so it’s time for me to go, they started pulling out syringes and spoons, so I tell them I will holler at them, they asked me to come around sometimes, I’m saying to myself “yeah right.”

I drove off, destination rim shop! I have just enough money now to purchase me some rims and tires; once I got there, I knew exactly what kind of rims I wanted.

They were centerlines they were used tricks they were gold andchrome, my back rims were ten inches and my front were four inches, and I bought four inch tires for the front, and I bought fifties for the back I had to get some heavy duty air shocks.

This took about two hours once they pulled my car around it was a very different car.

It had my personality, I went, and got my windows tinted, now I got my widows tinted blue like my car, I purchased a Camaro decal that goes across the visor of the windshield.

That was enough for that day, but I wasn’t done, I would eventually put chrome traction bars, and a rear-end cover that was gold underneath, then I would purchase a quick silver shift kit it was also chrome, I took the original shift out and replaced it.

I would also put a kit in the transmission. Every time the transmission changes gears it would turn the tires over to burn rubber, I kitted my carburetor out as well.

Now it was time for some music I spent fifteen hundred dollars on my music, I would purchase a pioneer sound system with Yamaha six by nine speakers for the back, and I put two in the front with a hundred watt equalizer that was all push bottoms with all kind of lights.

At night time the inside of the car was nice I had a red dome light in the inside with the lights from the music and my chrome gear shifter would make this car looks so beautiful the inside interior was a peanut butter color.

The car was diffidently eye candy a chick magnet, now I am ready to ride.

My friends would come by every weekend, every weekend we had something planed out to do, we were going to the lakefront, or we were going out of town.

We had a total of; I am going to try to name the automobiles that were in our crew.

It was I of course, now I didn’t tell you before, my car was unique, it was one of a kind because I had a 1979 backend, and a 1981 frontend, the car was brand new, kitted out not a Z-28 could touch it, because of the way it was design it was sweet.

We had one female who road with us, her name was Karen now Karen had a blue and black Z-28 with t-tops, she would ride with us when we would go to parties in Baton Rouge you will hear more about them stories in the next chapter.

Let me see if I can name my crew by the automobiles, two Z-28, three Trans- Ams, two Camaros and we had a cougar.

These was my closest friends, now we would have a couple of outsiders also there were more Trans Am and Camaros.

The funny thing about riding is that when you are riding, you would pick up all kind of people who wanted to ride, no matter where you are going, eventually you would see them drop off.

I started meeting all kind of people; I would run into one of my old friends from school we played in the band together we both played the trumpet.

We call him brother we call his sister, sister and he had a baby brother name Hakim. Claudette and I knew of the family Claudette knew sister from school and I knew brother.
Michael's Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Brother played with one of the New Orleans brass bands he was really good, but he was also a big time drug dealer he had his own crib in Kenner, city, Jefferson Parish, southeastern Louisiana, on the Mississippi River, a suburb of New Orleans;

His little brother Hakim was selling drugs for him. He really did not know what he was doing. And I did so he would start giving me ounces of this new crave that's taking over we call it "water" a piper dine derivative C17H25N used especially as a veterinary anesthetic and sometimes illicitly as a psychedelic drug to induce vivid mental imagery called also angel dust, PCP.

I was selling so much of this drug that his brother wanted to know who was helping him, he told him about how I was the one who was doing all the hustling for him.

That is when I would hook back up with brother but on a different level.

Upon me being, back reacquainted with brother he would eventually let me in on his operation and that is when his little brother was no longer needed. However, I would still look out for him. I purchased him a firebird used of course but it was nice I helped him fix it up.

I was pulling in so much money, brother wanted to put me in my own spot, but I was not ready for that, I was doing my own thing I was not stationary I was always on the go.

I quite working at the shipyard, the streets had me, with all of the fast money and the cars and women.

Brother and his family had a laboratory where they made the drug he had a chemist in the family he would show me the whole operation where they would have the (PCP) in a powder form, and a liquid form, you could smoke it are you could snort it.

I had access to this poison; I would eventually bring in some of my friends to help me move the product, my friend James who we call Hicks, would be my right hand man I would give him ounces at a time and he would bring me my money back like clockwork every two days.

I remember one time my mother found a couple of ounces in my drawer and she confronted me about it, I told her I was holding it for someone and she gave it back to me, and then she told me not to bring that mess in the house again, and then she told me to be careful.

One day I was at the laboratory bagging up and dipping some (PCP), I didn't know I had inhale the stuff and it had gotten into my system I was driving home one night and freaked out and couldn't drive, I had to call James to come and pick me up and take me home.

When I arrived at home, James brought me in the house and told my mother that someone had put something in my drink. My mother gave me some water to drink and man I had gotten so mess up all over again, I was crawling on the floor crying, I was so scare, when I drank that water, James told her to give me some milk, once I drank the milk I started feeling better.

James would never ever let me forget what he had done for me; I think he thought after that I had owed him because he started coming up short with my money, sometimes I would go to his house he would be in his room with many of his friends getting wasted.

I would be upset, but I really never let it showed, I had my sights on his sister Tony, now Tony was this beautiful high yellow fine as can be young lady, and she was feeling me. I was moving too fast; I let a lot of women get away because I was moving too fast.

I'm not towing my own horn, but I had a lot of women feeling me, now I don't know if it was because of the car or the money or the drugs, or my swag, are it could have been a little of all that rolled up together.

I kept so much money on me, but I always kept my pistol with me all times.

My father would come home every now and then, he would give me all of these guns to put up for him, and I would keep the ones that I liked.

I would let my father use my car whenever he would come to town.

There was never enough time in the day for me; I would spend time at home some days playing with my nephews. My cousin would come by all the time from Grey Louisiana to get what I had to offer, I would never charge him that much because this is my blood.

On the weekends, I would travel to southern university where Bennie was in school. Bennie he was my next-door neighbor who I grew up with, one of my best friends, we would ride, the whole crew and I would
drive to Southeastern Louisiana University, and Northwestern State University we would hit all the country
towns on our way we would go to the football games, Greek shows.

One of my cousins was going to Grambling State University; we would go to the parties there and have a
good time.

These were just some of the foolish things I was doing in my life it seems like I just wanted to have fun and
was not looking towards my future I thank God today for my life changes for drawing me to him.

Him who has an ear let him hear.

All the days of his separation shall he eat nothing that is made of the vine tree, from the kernels
even to the husk?"
— Numbers 6:4

Nazarites had taken, among other vows, one, which debarred them from the use of wine. In order that
they might not violate the obligation, they were forbidden to drink the vinegar of wine or strong liquors,
and to make the rule still clearer.

They were not to touch the unfermented juice of grapes, nor even to eat the fruit either fresh or dried.
In order, altogether, to secure the integrity of the vow, they were not even allowed anything that had to do
with the vine; they were, in fact, to avoid the appearance of evil.

Surely, this is a lesson to the Lord’s separated ones, teaching them to come away from sin in every
form, to avoid not merely its grosser shapes, but even its spirit and similitude. Strict walking is much
despised in these days, but rest assured, dear reader; it is both the safest and the happiest.

Who yields a point or two to the world is in fearful peril; he who eats the grapes of Sodom will soon
drink the wine of Gomorrah.

A little crevice in the sea-bank in Holland lets in the sea, and the gap speedily swells until a province
is drowned. Worldly conformity, in any degree, is a snare to the soul, and makes it more and more liable to
presumptuous sins. Moreover.

The Nazarite who drank grape juice could not be quite sure whether it might not have endured a
degree of fermentation, and consequently could not be clear in heart that his vow was intact, so the
yielding, temporizing Christian cannot wear a conscience void of offence, but must feel that the inward
monitor is in doubt of him.

Things doubtful we need not doubt about; they are wrong to us. Things tempting we must not dally
with but flee from them with speed.

Better, be sneered at as a Puritan than be despised as a hypocrite. Careful walking may involve much
self-denial, but it has pleasures of its own, which are more than a sufficient recompense.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Chapter 15

My big sister

Claudette would finally get her orders to come home; she would be station at the New Orleans Naval Station.

The house would definitely come to life now; Claudette would make the house a home. My sister Claudette spent thirty years in the Navy she is a very hard worker, after she retired from the navy she could not be one of those women who just lay around the house doing nothing she had to be busy, I guess the navy would play apart in her work ethics.

I was excited that my big sister was home once again because she was out of my life for a while.

We would have some good times, now Claudette love to cook we would always have something good to eat, she made sure that the refrigerator, and the deep freezer stayed full and the pantries.

She would always need two shopping carts whenever she goes grocery shopping; she would always by imported beer, beer like Löwenbräu, Heinekens, and Becks beer, sometimes me and my friends would be outside when she would arrive from buying groceries and she would give all of us a beer.

Claudette, I would describe her as a people person, as my father was, I think I have a little of that in me as well.

She loves to have a good time around this time Greg was selling cars. I must say Greg was a good sales agent. The kids went to this nice day care center in the garden district, and they also went to Saint Martins this was a nice school as well, my mother was working at veterans memorial hospital and Claudette was station at the Navy base but she would live at home.

Now around this time I was not working I was hustling I do not think anyone knew what I was doing but Greg, I was making some good survival money off the weed that he had, and the PCP from brother.

Since I did not work I would help Claudette out and I did not think anything of it because this is my blood my duty to chip in and help whenever I was needed.

I would wake up in the morning bring my nephews to day care and pick them up in the evening times, once I have finish making my rounds are whatever else I had to do, I was never late picking them up, I loved playing with my nephews everybody knew me at the day care center and at their schools.

They had a nice young woman working at happy times the daycare center who was very attractive, I never got around to her, I had too many already, but I had my sights on her.

I would sit in front of the day care until they would get out of the swimming pool with my tops down listening to the music with different women in the car all of the time.

I also had to drop my mother off at work some days her and her co-works sometimes it would be Mrs. Parker or Mrs. Brown some days I would drop Mrs. Parker kids off at this private school.

Every day I was doing something, it was just as if I had a job, some days it would pay off now I would bring Claudette to work many times, Claudette worked the farthest at the Navy base.

New Orleans has three naval facilities one is located at the Lakefront Airport on Lake Pontchartrain serves smaller craft, and the Alvin Callender Naval Air Station it is an installation used by reserve units of the armed forces.

Then there is the Naval Support Activity base that is located on the west bank in Algiers, and they have a naval hospital on this base where we would take them to the pediatrician.

Some days I would drop Claudette off at this base and she would take the Navy P boat across the river to the base that she works.

The base that Claudette worked at took about forty-five minutes to get there on some days with the traffic; it was located on the other side of town, North Claiborne and Portland.

Claudette registered my car and grace my car with a navy decal to get on any military base that I wanted to at any given time, this what started me going to the club on the navy base on the west bank.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Now on some days that I had to pick Claudette up from work especially on Fridays I would drive inside the base everyone knew that I was Claudette little brother, I sit out there with my tops off just taking in the sights waiting on the horn to blow ending the work day when all the sailors would walk by.

Claudette would sometimes ask me if I had anything to do and I would say no even if I did, I would never tell her that I had anything to do, she would invite me to Jack Dempsey’s.

Jack Dempsey’s is this nice bar and eatery that sits right across from the navy base, we would visit this place quite often I even started bring my friends there thanks to Claudette, Claudette would meet her friends there and she always would introduce me to all her friends.

She always treated me special, and all of her girl friends couldn’t believe that she had a brother that looks so young Claudette would ask me what I wanted to drink back then gin was my choice I would always order gin and orange juice.

Then she would ask me if I wanted something to eat, and I would order me either a seafood platter or a fish or shrimp dinner, and she enjoyed doing this for me.

Now at home Claudette would cook like this all the time, she would cook, stuffed shrimp or lamb chops, stuffed pork chops, gumbo and dressing, jambalaya, you name it she can cook it, Claudette is an excellent cook.

Baking was also her specialty as well; I use to love when she fried these apple pies, and make these homemade lemon meringue pies.

I can talk forever about my sister, but I must move on you will read more about her in a later chapter.

Closing out this chapter, I can remember one occasion when my friend Moon and I, do you remember I spoke briefly about Moon his name is Kenneth.

We were good friends actually it was his older brother Charlie who I use to hang out with but Charlie was in the army and all my other friends were gone so I took Moon up under my wing and we were together a lot we would ride everywhere together Texas,Florida, you name it.

We would go to concerts, go shopping together, I was always trying to turn Moon on to women, but Moon was moving kind of slow on the level of getting women so I had to leave him behind some days.

This particular time Moon and I were in the city, his uncle own a bar call big red. While we were at the club I would go around the corner and serve a couple of people I knew right across from the projects on Martin Luther King at the shooting gallery, now this shooting gallery is a house where this mom and pop would rent out their rooms to junkies so they can shoot up there dope.

On this day for some reason or another, I decided to call home to see if anyone came by the house looking for me or called for me.

If I remember correctly I think my mother answered the phone and told me that Hakim had came by the house and was raising sand about Greg stole something from him while he was in his car, and then he got into it with my sister and called her a bitch.

I asked my mother to put Claudette on the phone she gave me the run down, I told her I was on my way home.

When I got back to the bar I told Moon that I had to go and handle something we both jump in the car and I drove like a bat out of hell all the way home.

Once I got back home I drop Moon off at his house, I told him I would holler at him later, I didn’t need any help back then, I thought I was the badest mother fucker around, because of the pistol I felt like I weighed five hundred pounds and no one could touch me.

Between the dope and the guns, I was actually setting myself up for where I am today writing this book behind bars.

Back to the story, once I got back in the subdivision I went straight home to check on everyone, everyone was fine I think Claudette was worried because she did not know what was going on, and for that matter, I did not either, but I would find out. When I got there, Greg was nowhere to be found.

Claudette told me that Hakim came by looking for Greg and told her that her husband had stole something from him and then he threaten her and called her a bitch.

Page 72 of 188
Michael's Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

That really pissed me off because he had called my sister a bitch. It is funny how life is Claudette was my protector growing up she was all ways there to fight my battles.

Now I am grown and I am fighting for her honor, I feel that I am to protect both of my sisters, you must understand I am the Alpha Male this is my duty!

After Claudette told me everything I went to Hakim house now I knew his whole family his mom, dad, brothers, and sisters, and they all liked me, I would eat dinner at they’re house with the whole family some nights.

I was so mad I was not thinking rationally I jump out the car approach the door when Hakim came out the house trying to explain everything to me, now I got two sides of the story, I want go into details because the book is about me, no one else.

I knew what had taken place but blood is thicker than water. All I wanted was Hakim to apologize to my sister I told him to get in his car and go right now and apologize to my sister are we would have some beef.

Well he did what I had asked of him, and everyone was fine at least Claudette and I thought that everything would be fine.

Greg would finally show up. He is mad, he told me that Hakim and his brother had rolled up on him with they’re crew, so Greg and I strapped up, meaning we got our guns and went looking for them, soon as we got to the park they were in a field in back of their house, sitting on brother trans am.

Now the street we were on had houses on both sides, the park was at our back, and the field they were in was to our right side, once we got out of the car, everyone went to shooting at each other as if it was a gunfight at the okay corral in broad day light.

Greg had the eighteen-inch twelve-gauge pump and I had the nickel-plated pearl white handle thirty-eight.

We were in Greg’s Datsun and the only thing we could do was hide behind the car and my dumb ass did not hide at all I’m just there looking for the prefect shot I yelling telling Greg to go for the gas tank to blow they’re ass up. I am looking at these m-1 bullets flying right by my head in slow motion, Greg car gets the blunt of everything fortunate no one is shot.

From that day on everyone started giving me more respect because now they knew that I would pull the trigger and that I was not affair.

That would end my connection after that incident, I would still run into some one from the family we would speak say a few words but it would never be the same.

(My Ignorance)

The quality or state of being ignorant *ignorance of facts*
Playing the field

I played the field a lot, it was not my intentions to do the things that I was doing, and it seems that I was never satisfy with just one women.

You would be amazed how easy it was for me, as I said before, I do not know if it was the car, the money, the drugs, or the clothes, whatever it was I had all types of women after me.

Now I know what you thinking that these were hood rats, nope! They were not. These women were pursuing something in life when I met them.

Nevertheless, I must say I had my share of hood rats as well, meaning neighborhood women.

When I first came, home from the military one of my friends Steve have three sisters and I was tight with his whole family, and all three of them use to like to get high now Rhonda was married and her, and her husband moved in a house around the corner from their mother.

Rhonda and I would meet up down the line in life after she and her husband have gotten a divorce. She would get on drugs and I would take advantage of her. I am a shame for that, she would always say, Michael you are like my little brother I cannot believe you want to have sex with me. Nevertheless, guess what? She did.

Then there was Dawanda, now this young woman was very jazzy, she carried herself well she was the baby of the family. She would be a good wife for someone, one day.

She was enrolled in college on the lakefront, matter of fact, she was going to school with my first cousin Eddie, I would give Dawanda rides over the river quite a bit, every day I was rolling going over the river, and she was headed in the same directions that I was.

I would put the air-condition on, play some nice music, for her, bust up a joint or two, then I would stop at the daiquiri shop and purchase us a medium daiquiri. She would be so relax she would take her shoes off and chill as we ride. We would have nice stimulating conversations on all kind of subjects. Some days she would ask me to take her to her cousins’ house, and then she would want me to hang out with them and she always wanted to introduce me to her relatives.

As time went on, we started digging each other, now we both had someone else in our lives at the time, but we were into each other so much we became secret lovers until she took a job with Shell corporations and move to Los Angeles.

And then there was Deidra now I and Deidra was secret lovers for a long time as well, but I think everyone knew I was hitting her, I would always get the Datsun from Greg and go and pick Deidra up. Now Deidra is the middle age girl of the family.

Sometimes when I would drop her back off at home, everyone would be outside and then she would get out of the car still trying to put hear clothes on.

We were just into the sex it was nothing else she was about six feet tall and so sexy to me ,she turned me on all the time I could just look at her and had to have her.

We would have sex everywhere we could fine. We would ride on the levee, get out, and have sex this went on for a while as well.

Until she started dating someone, and move away but whenever she would come home, we would have some conversation for each other.

I would also have another one of my sister friends who lived right across the street from Deidra her name was Denise we had a little fling as well until one day she decided to tell Claudette that I wanted to be her boy friend I just wanted what I wanted.

Around this time my friend Hicks, my right hand man who was selling the PCP for me told me about Denise that she was good at having sex, so that’s what got me curious about Denise, but I must say Denise was fine as hell.
Michael’s Life Time Memories  By Michael Brown

There was another one of Claudette friends I was crazy about she was always calling me her little boy friend when I was young. Now that I am older and got business about myself and my swag is one thousand, I recall this one evening I and some of my boys was cooling in front the house when Lisa stops in front of the house and asked me to come with her, I told her that I would be there in a minute. Now Lisa lived about four houses from us.

When she asked me this I was kind of shock but I knew she was into drugs, so I thought that she wanted me to give her something, now let me tell you that Lisa was this sexy beautiful young lady she had gold in her mouth and she had this unique accent.

I told my boys that I would be right back to watch my car. I ran to her house, she was already in side when I got there. I knocked on the door, her brother open the door. I asked where Lisa was and that is when Lisa yells from the back of the house to let him in.

Once I go inside everyone is there. Her whole family I knew them all. She have some nice looking sisters, the whole family was friends with my family everyone speaks and Lisa tells me that she is in her bedroom to come on back where she is. So I just started walking to her voice, once I got to her room she tells me to come in and close the door behind me.

Soon as I get in she asked me what is happening, I tells her nothing, and she takes off her clothes right in front of me gets butt ass naked.

That’s just some of my sister friends, another one of Claudette friends I use to hang out with was Regina, now Regina is my friend Don Sister who I hung out with in Germany. Regina and I would hang out nightlong; I went to jail one night with her.

She did not bail out on me, she went and told my mother and she came back with the money to bail me out, I want go into details about her, just know that she was a fine beautiful women as well that got caught up into the dope game and I use that to my advantage.

Then there was Dorothy now every time we would see each other we were making love we could not get enough of each other she was just so sexy to me and I enjoyed making love to her she also was caught up in the dope game.

You see my hood if you did not get out of the neighborhood it would eat you up, you would become a product of the environment you would become a statistic.

Now my friend hicks had this nice young lady she was about a year younger then I, her name is Nedra she was about five six hairy and fine and cute.

Hicks is my partner, but he also was in debt with me for about seven hundred dollars, I actually knew Nedra before he did; my father and her father were good friends, he use to come by the house all the time.

I guess Nedra felted for Hicks because of his reputation around the neighborhood, they had become an item; Now Nedra would always call me whenever she and Hicks get into a fight or an argument.

One night she called me and asked me to meet her in the park, when I picked her up she tells me to pull off, so I pull off and she tells me to just drive.

I figure she wants to talk so I take her to the lakefront; this is a nice place to just sit and over look the water and just vent.

Once we got there she starts to cry, I don’t know what to do, so I put my arms around her and tell her that it’s going to be all right, she immediately grabs me and caresses me so tight and start kissing me so passionately, the only thing I do is respond the same way.

This affair would continue for quite a while as well until she would move to Marrero.

Hicks would eventually put three babies in her. Then leave her for another woman, we are still friends today.

Nedra and I was the same way, we were so hot for each other, we could not wait until we would meet, and we arranged to meet on special days.

It was always dark when we would meet, we tried one time doing the day, and I went to her house around one in the afternoon.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Soon as I walked in the house, she starts kissing me. Moreover, grinding on me taking off her clothes when the phone rings, and its Hicks.

He wants to know why I am there, Nedra was quick thinking she told him that she seen me passing by and flag me down, to ask me would I take him a plate of food that she had prepared.

Little did we know that Nedra neighbor had call Hicks and told him that I was there; he was spying on her all the time so we never tried to meet again in the daytime.

You recall my associates’ who I rode with Eddie who had the black Z-28, well he had this female friend name Bridget, well I and Bridget were road dogs, now this was not his main girl but never the least it was his girl.

Eddie would be working; he worked for the Jefferson Parish water works plant doing the day, and I was not working I was hustling so I had nothing but time on my hand.

After I would drop everyone off where they needed to be in my family, it was time for me to do me, I and Bridget we would go to New Orleans East where some of her kinfolks lived we would spend the whole day getting high running errands selling dope.

We always pay attention to the time, so that we would make it back home on time. Now I knew Bridget whole family as well, she had a little baby girl who was crazy about me I would spoil her.

Bridget also had an older sister name Cynthia, now Cynthia was fine and sexy and beautiful, I would hook up with her later on in life once I come home for a visit from California.

I would spend a weekend with Cynthia, her boy friend was in jail, and she asked me would I come by and keep her company, I told her I would.

I knew what she wanted so I would give it to her, you see she remembers that I use to take her shopping buying her clothes treating her like family, and I never looked at Cynthia in a sexual way, because I was hitting her sister.

Bridget and I would spend nights together at her cousins’ house, her cousin would leave us their apartment, and they were all fond of me.

Once I came back from California Cynthia was one of the first ones to come by and get me, she took me to her place ASAP and we made mad passionate love, and then she took me to see her sister Bridget.

Bridget was doing well when she seen me, she started screaming and crying, and ran and gave me a big kiss, this was the first time seeing her in years.

She introduced her husband and her new family to me, and then she asks me where it is at nigga? I know you got it that is when I pulled out a quarter ounce of coke and let everyone get high.

Now Eddie never caught me with his girl but I knew he had to know because my car would be park at Bridget’s motherhouse a lot, and I knew people in the neighbor had to tell him, but we never had any words about it.

Maybe because that was not his main girl or he just did not care, because we were all smashing everything there was in site.

Then there was Fred, you remember Fred, he was another one of my associates, Fred had the Trans am, his girl name was Andrêa, now I knew Fred pretty well his mother and father were down to earth people, they were so proud of us all, we were all doing good everyone had brand new cars, just enjoying life.

Now Fred little sister she had to be at least two or three years younger than we were she was crazy about me she would always send message to me from Carolyn.

She wanted me to take her to her prom, now Faye was a beautiful young woman, but I had so many women I could not find the time for her.

I didn’t want to hurt her because I know me, she actually turned out to be this big tall gorgeous lady, now back to Fred’s girl, Andrêa was about five-five one hundred twenty-five pounds sexy brown skinned with curves, I did not try to pursue her.

I really do not know how we would become sex partners, but we would meet sometimes at her house and have a quickie.
Michael's Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Our relationship was only sexual, I would run into her at her job she worked at this gas station in Westwego.

And she also stayed next door to Joan, now Joan was my girl friend at least one of my girl friends, my friend Steve girl friend Sandra her cousin was Joan.

Steve would introduce me to her, and don’t forget that I was hitting all of Steve sisters, anyway Joan was from Franklinton, Louisiana, she was high yellow long hair fine as can be and she would come down for the summer to live, I guess that's how I met Andra.

You know when a woman get a man who is good in the bed they always tell their girl friends how good he is, they brag on him and then you know what happens? They get curious and try to see what all the fuss is about, and that is how it happens.

Then there was Wanda you remember my associate who had the black Camaro; Well Wanda was in a relationship with scout.

I knew Wanda and her family real well, my sisters were real good friends with her older sisters, and brothers, her family named one of their kids after my sister Kathryn.

Wanda is six feet brown skinned and fine, all of her sisters are good looking, and I was involved with two of them doing my lifetime.

Now I and Wanda would hook up every now and then she would sometimes babysit for her sister Rachel, now Rachel live in Harvey, and she would call me up to come over some nights.

Every one of these females and many more was at my convenient whenever I wanted them.

I am just trying to get you to see how messed up in the head I was, I would like the reader to understand that I am not in no way boasting or bragging on the relationships that I had with my associates girl friends or any other women.

And I am not trying to justify my actions, but I never had any kind of sexual relationships with my boys girl friends I grew up with, my best friends Reginald or Bennie or any of my relatives girl friends, I did have my standards or so I thought.

You know I never had any real male role models growing up, all the men in my life were doing their thing, from my friends father’s, to my uncles, my father, all the Brown men were something else.

Nevertheless, this book is not about them it is about where I was and where I am now in my life.

The Bible tells us that pride is the downfall of every man unless used for the Glory of God. I put my pride in Jesus, who arose from the grave after dying on the cross at Calvary for the redemption of all humankind.

Now I thank God for my pride because I learned to use it for the glory of God, and not my own.

We are not on this earth to please man. We are here to please God. If we cannot please God then there is no use for us being here. God made man for his pleasure, not our own.
Yolande

I can recall this period as if it was yesterday, how I would meet the love of my life. It was on a weekend and my crew was parked in front of the neighborhood, on Butler Drive.

This was one of the spots where we would chill under a shade tree in front of Calvin mothers’ house. We called Calvin by his nickname black.

Now on this particular day we were trying to decide what we were going to get into, the neighborhood was jumping all of the kids were outside.

We were lined up as if we were in a parade, there was about four Trans- Ams, out there, and three Z28’s, and three Camaros, every ones car was beautiful, everyone had their tops off and we were all on the same station listening to the radio.

When this grey and black custom cougar rolls up on sixty and eights and they are bumping hard, so we all just started doing this dance call the puppy, the cougar stopped and whine down its tinted windows and its six females in the car.

To my surprise, Eddie and Fred had met them the week before on the lake.

I was told that they would offer them a good time if ever they were to visit the neighborhood, so now here there are Eddie told me, let us show them a good time he stated.

They were all nice looking young women, Eddie told them to follow us to our neighborhood park, so we all got in our cars and proceeded to our neighborhood park. Once we got to the park everyone exited their vehicles and went to choosing; now I really was not interested in anyone I already had my hands full I was okay.

While everyone is talking getting to know each other, I was really just chilling, my partner was with me Moon, I notice one of the neighborhood young women looking at me from a distance.

This young Lady was high yellow very light skinned about five eleven and fine, and cute, her sister went to school with Kathryn.

This young Lady friend was friends with my friend Troy who use to also ride with us he had a firebird.

After the young Ladies in the custom cougar left, they all made arrangements to meet at the lakefront next Sunday, I told them I would ride with them.

Later on, that day Troy told me that this chick wants to holler at me, so I asked him who was she and he told me his girl Tammy, girl friend wanted to talk with me.

I didn’t know who he was talking about at the time, he told me that she was checking me out in the park early that day, while I and Troy were talking they rolled up on us in this burnt orange grand prix.

I introduced myself to the both of them, they both said that they knew my sisters and me; they both complimented me on how I was dressed.

I was still dressing European style cashmere jacket nice hat shoes, corduroy pants.

Rolaine was her name, this young woman was enrolled at LSU, she lived right around the corner from me, she and her parents lived on Morgan Court, her older sister Rhonda moved to Atlanta with this person I knew we called lefty. His father was friends with my father his name is Mr. Johnson.

Now Rolaine and I would exchange phone numbers and began talking on the phone immediately. She would invite me to her house to meet her parents and to have dinner with them. I really was not feeling this at the time, but I accepted it because she was fine and she was a nice intelligent young woman. Moreover, I am curious and very much wanting to have sex with her.

In the same week that I met her parents, I came to find out that her parents were very nice and down to earth people who really love their daughter. I am eating dinner with her mother and father, having casual
talk, they wanted to know about my parents, I told them what they wanted to know I also founded out that her mother was also a nurse and that her father was a postal worker.

As the night went on Rolaine parents retired for the night and left us in the dining area. I said goodnight to them both and that is when Rolaine asked me if I would like something to drink and of course, I said yes.

She gave me crown Royal and coke, and she asked me to pick out a movie from there movie collection while she go and clean the kitchen. I told her that I would like to help and then after we would pick out a movie together. She was shock that I offer, I thank she was please that I offer to help her clean up the kitchen. They have a kitchen that is so huge.

Once we got finish with everything, we went to the entertainment room and took a seat on the sofa to watch television.

She told me to relax that I can take my shoes off, I did, she would snuggle up to me and start kissing me and I kiss her back and then she grabs my hand and tells me to follow her.

I obeyed like a nice little boy, and she leads me to the living room and tells me to come on and I’m like what if your mom are dad wake up she tells me that they’re not going to come in.

I guess she would know, so she takes off her clothes and lies down on the carpet floor, I do the same, and then we would make love for the first time we never got to watch our movie that night.

This was not how I wanted it to be but I had to take what I could get at the time because it was her idea but I would get a chance to show her the right way later down the line.

So I guess now she thinks that we are a couple, the rest of the week every night I would go to her house and spend quality time with her.

It is now Sunday when I and my crew rides every Sunday and I had promised them that I would go to the lakefront with them to meet the young women who was in the custom cougar.

Rolaine had to go back to LSU so that gave me free time not that I needed permission are anything.

Moon called me up asked me what was I getting into, I told him that I would be there at his house in ten minutes to be ready.

The whole crew met up at the shell gas station, it was about twenty cars all looking immaculate.

We would take over the streets and highways when we rolled everyone is looking and waving, and we always take the scenic routes through all the neighborhoods.

What would be a thirty-minute ride might take us two hours to finally arrive to our destination.

Once we got to the lake, we had a special spot where we would post up where everyone can see us and we can see everyone.

All we had to do was park and before you would know it, everyone would come around to check out the cars as if it was a car show. People would take pictures of the cars and just admire them.

In the midst of all the traffic, the custom cougar pulls up and all the young women would get out of the car the same ones who came by last week.

Eddie immediately approached this young woman name Roslyn, nice slim cute looking young woman, Fred would approach this young woman name Debra.

Little did I know that they were already communicating with the young women they did not have enough of women to go around, I want name all the hook ups but the ones I mention are the closest to me.

Now the young woman who was driving the cougar carried herself different from the rest of the women she stayed in the background, I slowly walked up to her and extended my hand to introduce myself to her.

she met my hand with hers and told me that her name was Yolande, and that she was just hanging out with her cousin Roslyn, and some friends, and that she is not looking for anything are any one.

I remember telling her that I am definitely not looking for anyone or a relationship either, I just thought that maybe we could be friends and go out to dinner or maybe go to the movies.

I told her that I have been in Europe for quite a while and that she seems to look like a nice person to just hang out with and talk, and that I love to have stimulating conversations with the opposite sex, I told her that I am only interested in a Platonic relationship.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

That did it, we exchanged phone numbers and said our goodbyes; I left the rest of the crew as I always did because I always thought that they were not on my level, Moon and I would go get into our own thing I was a hustler.

Around this time, I was still talking to Joan, there was Rolaine also, after Moon and I, would have been hanging out all day just riding getting loaded making drop offs. I would drop him off at his home and that is when I would call Joan while Rolaine was at LSU.

Now Joan and I would not go too many places together I kept her in the hood I would take her to the neighborhood park ride around the hood with her are sometimes just park in front of her cousins’ house or mine.

Some nights, Eddie, Fred, Scout, and I would get our girls and go get a motel room. We would all share the double room now you remember I told you that Eddie had Bridget, Fred had Andréa, Scout had Wanda, and I would take Joan.

“Oh” and Steve would also be with us with, Joan cousin Sandra.

Now I have been with every one of these women, all of them except Sandra.

We would do this often, Joan seemed like she didn’t have a problem with this she never gave me a hard time she was fine with what every I wanted to do, nice young lady too, now that I have grown up now, I understand that this one was also a keeper.

I use to have problems with the New Orleans police department they had it out for me. They use to stop me all the time and search my vehicle.

On time they pulled Moon and I over and founded weed in the car. They told me to eat it or go to jail. Then there was this time I was stop again and they wanted me to participate in a drug sting on the lakefront they wanted to give me some money to purchase some marijuana and once I have purchased the drugs they wanted me to give them a sign. In addition, that is when they were going to rush in an arrest the perpetrator.

Therefore, I would eventually stop hanging on the lake or I would sneak on the late, stay a short period, and then leave.

The police were always harassing me. My car just was not a chick magnet; it was eye candy that you just could not help but notice. The police wanted to know how a young unemployed black man could afford to drive a car like the one I had.

Yolande would eventually call me, because I never used the number she gave me to call her, to be honest I had forgotten all about her that quick.

I was at the time with Rolaine and Joan and I was into so much. Then there was Maumi, now this young woman was very special to me she was about five two long sandy hair, Japanese, her mother was Japanese and her father was Black.

I called her May-May, I was in hot pursuit of this young lady, I never in my life pursuit a female before like I did this one, it took me all of six months to finally get her to go out with me.

We would talk all the time about everything. I told her about Yolande. We were having nice conversations, about her ambitions in life.

Yolande and I would meet one more time before things would start to take off.

One late afternoon Yolande and her cousin just decided to drop by unannounced, they came by my house, and everyone was home my mother, Claudette, Lamond, Lewayne and Greg.

I introduced them to everyone then I called Eddie and told him that his girl who he was in pursuit of was here at my house with her cousin. He told me he had the house tonight because his parents and the rest of the family went out. I told him that I was on my way; we all got in Yolande car and drove around the corner to where Eddie was.

Once we got in Eddie house, he was all over his girl. Yolande and I we decided to go sit in her car. We had a nice conversation that night, this was the first time we kissed, and I was nervous as hell. My lips were trembling, and she made fun of me, and we laughed about it, we kept kissing until I would get it right.

From that night on, we would start hooking up and calling each other on the phone, we would talk for hours at a time.
Michael's Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

May-May and I had gotten real close also she was trying to hook me up with one of her girl friends, but I told her that I was not feeling her girl friend. I was interested in her, and that I have been having a crush on her for a long time.

Eventually I wore May-May down and we became an item she would come over to the house all the time she would bring candy for my nephews whenever she came over, she loved my family, and they loved her.

Now May-May was patience with me with the things I was doing, I thank because she was going through a divorce and she was studying to become a doctor she was doing her residents at Saint Charles general hospital.

Yolande and I would decide to meet at City Park, now City Park was a park in the middle of New Orleans, it is a big park, and it is beautiful.

We would meet at my spot where the crew would post up on weekends.

We would meet there almost every day around five in the evening, now on this particular evening I was waiting on her to show up, that is when this cougar pulls up, you remember I told you that her car was grey and black? Well the car that pulls up was the same color as my car, flex blue.

Yolande went and got her car painted the same color as mine, she told me that blue was her favorite color, and when she seen my car she wanted hers blue as well, I also told her that blue was my favorite color as well.

Yolande and I would sit in the park for hours we would sit in her car behind her dark tinted windows, and just fog up the windows kissing and just experiencing this feeling that was un-explainable.

This would go on for months we would meet in the park and talk on the phone constantly.

May-May would tell me that Yolande was not the one for me, and I would here her out, take what she was saying into consideration, and weight out what she was telling me, I guess women know women uh?

On the days when Yolande or May-May would be busy and I am not kicking it with Joan or none of the hood rats or the crew, I would drive to Louisiana State University in Baton Rouge, to spend some time with Rolaine.

. . . . . . .

Also around this time I would meet some powerful people and little did I know they were family, real close to me, my blood, who had all the work, cocaine, I am back in business.

I started supplying all the drug dealers in my neighborhood with cocaine from ounces to kilos.

Some days I would have to make runs to Baton Rouge to drop packages off at southern university or I would have to go to Grambling State University in Monroe Louisiana, you remember I told you my cousins were enrolled in school there one of them would become a professor at southern.

Now that I have some connections again my pockets are, fat I am feeling myself again I am in my comfort zone selling dope.

I am riding with big money in my pocket enjoying life; I would also meet the criminal district judge wife, a Caucasian woman who had jungle fever.

Peggy and her son Mark. Mark was an addict he was shooting cocaine he had a thousand dollar a day habit. Now Peggy owns this car wash, this is where I would meet her at, we started talking, and she knew many of the same people I knew. She invited me to a party in this nice neighborhood in river ridge. She had this big house. Built in heated swimming pool in the back yard, once I got there I knew so many people.

There was one of the guys there who have been trying to ride with my crew, he had a black trans am, I found out that Peggy was the one that bought him the trans am. Peggy and I were not into each other like that, but we became close on the money tip.

I would introduce Greg to her, and we would start to sell them pounds and pounds of weed, I am tripping because her husband is the one locking folks up for the very same thing we were doing. Nevertheless, everything was cool.
Back to Yolande, we were doing just fine moving slow enjoying each other company everyone is good, for that matter, everyone is satisfy all of my girls, life is good; my crew and I would still ride every weekend.

On this particular Sunday, we all would meet at the lakefront. My crew and I would finally arrive and Yolande and her girls would be there, we would all have a good time, when it was time to go Yolande asked us meaning Eddie, and I because Eddie was talking to her cousin Roslyn, would we like to come over to her house?

Now I have never been offer to come over to her house, all this time we were getting to know each other, and I have never made love to her either, we were still in the early stagiest of our relationship. Once we got to her house, her house was located in the twelfth ward the same ward I was raise in, she was living on Annunciation Street.

It was Bennie, Eddie, Fred, Moon, John, Anthony, and I the females were Roslyn, Debra, and Yolande, Erna, Karen, so two would be left out. Therefore, Anthony and Moon would catch out, and leave.

Now Yolande is looking good. She has on these khaki shorts, but I was a little upset because her outer liner of her panties were cutting through her shorts, and everyone was noticing this, and I didn’t like it, that’s when I knew that I was feeling her. I have not made love to her yet, I only kissed her a couple of times, and I am getting feelings.

She had this nice bar in her dining area she offer us something to drink, but I guess she didn’t have what she was looking for, so she asked someone to go to the store, she asked if anyone had change for a hundred dollar bill. Now I am thinking she is trying to see what kind of brothers she is dealing with, she wanted to know if we were some broke ass niggas are what.

No one spoke up. Everyone is looking crazy the females are in the back laughing. That is when I got up and walk right to the back where they were, and I asked Yolande what she needed. While I’m talking I’m pulling out my money, I had about thousand dollars on me from trapping, they all was looking at my hands with all this money, and they was just going crazy giggling, and that’s when I said dam you all never seen money before! In addition, that is when they all straighten up.

I gave Yolande change for a hundred, someone went to the store and came back with drinks, and we all had a beautiful night, after that night Yolande and I would get even closer.

Yolande was from Holly Grove her family stayed off Carrollton Ave, this was also call the Garden District the seventeenth ward. I can recall one day Yolande wanted me to come and pick her up at her mothers’ house, and I told her I would be there in a little bit.

Once I got to her mother’s house she told me that she would be looking out for me, she knew it would at least take me thirty minutes to get there.

On my way out of the subdivision, I stop by Rolaine house. Because she was in town she was standing outside with her girl friends when I pulled up she was not expecting me she was happy to see me. She liked to show me off to her friends because a lot of them also wanted me and she knew this.

She asked me would I come by that night when I get back in. I told her that I would. She also asked me to come with her to visit her grandfather who was in the nursing home the following week. In addition, she wanted me to take her back to LSU after we visit with her grandfather. “Wow” this is just too much this girl was really trying to reel me in.

Now I liked Rolaine a lot but not for the long run, because little did anyone knew. Yolanda had me hook line and sinker,

In addition, I was feeling May-May it was a tossup between those two.

I told Rolaine that we would talk about it once I get back that I will come by later, I gave her a nice kiss in front of her friends, because I knew that is what she wanted.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Once I got to Yolande mothers house I pulled right in front with my tops off, the music, playing at a nice level the front door is open, but the screen door is close, but they can see out but no one can see in. I am there waiting just chilling when this woman comes out the house that I am in front of. When she bends down to my passenger window I turned the music down to hear what she has to say. She tells me young man what you are doing in front of my house. Now I am tripping, I tell her I am waiting on Yolande, she tells me that Yolande is her daughter and that she is a married woman, and to get from in front of her house and a matter of fact I do not want to see you on this street ever again.

All I could do was start my car up and pull away very confuse. Once I got back home I called May-May up and told her what had happen. She asked me if I was alright, I told her that I was fine, we talked for a while on the phone, and then she asked me could I bring her to work in the morning, I told her I would see her in the morning and for her to have a good night. Then I was on my way to Rolaine house when I arrive she thought that I wasn’t going to show up, once I got their she gave me a drink asked me if I wanted something to eat I wasn’t hungry for any food. I just wanted to be pampered; we had a good night we both felt a sleep on the sofa all snuggled up, once I woke up. I told her that I would be back in about an hour that I had a run to make.

So I hurried home took a shower and then I called my baby May-May, and I told her that I will be over in a minute, it’s now about six in the morning, she had to be at work at seven, I ask her if she was hungry we drove through the drive through window at McDonalds. We made it to Saint Charles General right on time we kissed and said good-bye; she told me she would be on duty for sixteen hours, and that she would call me when she gets time.

I never made it back that day to Rolaine but we did hook up the next day, the following week would arrive when it was time to meet Rolaine Grandfather.

I remembered calling Rolaine on the phone and asking her was she ready to go. She was not feeling it she did not want to leave so early. Nevertheless, little did she know this is when I liked to travel? I like to move doing the time everyone was going to work. I would fit right in as if I was part of the work force, but I was actually trafficking drugs back and forth and being paid.

She would talk me out of leaving so early; we decided to leave after we had lunch with her grandfather. She asked me to come by and help her with something. I told her I would be there in a minute, on my way to the door I seen her father pasting by, he wave at me, I wave back, I guess he was on his way to work.

Now I have not heard from Yolande yet and I was not about to call her, she had some explaining to do, but I did not have time for the drama.

Rolaine was waiting on me when I got there, I seen when the door open up for me to enter, when I got to the door no one was standing there.

I holler out, “Rolaine,” and that is when she told me to come in and lock the door behind me. She told me to come to the bedroom because she needed help packing, once I enter the bedroom she was laying in the bed in the nude, now this would take at least another two hours, but it was well worth it.

She burns like a shot glass of vodka. She burns like a field of poppies at the edge of a rainforest.
In the poem, this woman is compared to a “shot glass of vodka and a field of poppies, with the word “like. However, there are also underlying metaphors that are unstated: vodka burns (like fire) in the throat and poppies burn (like fire) because of their red color. Both are intoxicating drugs (like the woman in the poem) that distort reality.

Rolaine was very intoxicating and she always wanted to have sex, I really did not have a problem with that but I was already stretching it thin with trying to please everyone.

After our escapade, we would take a shower together and continue to enjoy each other in the shower. Then we would get dress, and head to the nursing home to visit her grandfather, once we got there we took a
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

tour of the residents, this was a nice high-rise community, and the room where he stayed was very nice, spacious, and clean.

We all ate lunch had a nice after noon together, her grandfather was a white man, I should have known how yellow she is that she had to have been mix with something.

I am giving her a hint that we need to get on the road; I needed to be in Baton Rouge to drop this package off.

It was finally time to leave we were in Marrero not for from Shaw high school, so instead of going all the way back to the Huey, P, Long bridge. I decided to hit the expressway that would take me around to the Mississippi River Bridge then to the interstate until I pick up airline highway.

Now Rolaine thought we were going straight to her campus, but I told her that we were going to make a run to Grambling State University, now Grambling sets almost in Arkansas it is locate (35 mi) west of Monroe (Louisiana), city, seat of Ouachita Parish, northeastern Louisiana.

A port on the Ouachita River, It is a commercial center,
Northeast Louisiana University and the Masur Museum of Art are also located there.

Rolaine did not have a problem with us going to Grambling; she was actually excited that we were going there she had never been to this famous college.

Now this ride would take us every bit of eight hours from home to Monroe or it might take a little longer give or take, I have travel this road many times, quite often matter of fact.

We would finally get there, and we went straight to my cousin dormitory, my baby was tired and I was for that matter but I would hit me a couple of lines to stay alert, I would get Rolaine to smoke a joint every now and then.

My cousin was in a Fraternity and they were stepping the same night I got there. We were invited to the Greek show but we needed some rest, I decided to get a room for my girl and I, my cousin wanted us to stay there but I refuse.

We followed him to a motel six that was not too far off campus. I told him to come by and pick us up later. Once we got in the room, I went to the phone to ask the manager who has the best take out. We order some Chinese food, I convinced Rolaine to get high with me just enough to get a little buzz. We would make mad love repeatedly until we both felt a sleep.

Once my cousin got back we all went to the Greek show and had a great time. The next day we headed on down to Baton Rouge. I had one more stop to make at southern, before I drop Rolaine off at LSU. Her dad would have her car deliver to her dorm, because her car was getting work done to it.

Now my cousin really wanted us to hang around for a while, but I could tell that Rolaine was not use to this, and when she seen the drop off, she was somewhat unsettled, I did not want to expose her to this life style, this was a good girl.

We would leave early Sunday morning to head down to meet my other cousin at southern; also, I would holler at my boys Bennie and Mice and leave them a little something.

We would not stay long at all it was business only, and besides they would be home in two weeks.

Once we left southern, Rolaine and I would finally get to her dormitory at LSU, and she went straight to the bathroom, then came out, and made sure the door was lock.

Then she asked me to make love to her before I go, because she wanted me in her dorm because she told me she have been fantasizing about us making love in her dorm.

It was time for me to head back home I am tired, and all I want to do was sleep, but before I could go home, I had to make a run to the Saint Thomas projects on Saint Ann Street to drop off the money and get my cut.

Now once I got home it was my mother are my sister that told me that Yolande had call and left a message for me to call her as soon as I get in.

I know she had some explaining to do, but I would deal with her later, I needed some rest, I had called May-May, on the phone to ask if she would come over, she asked me when I got back, because she said that she also wanted to see me as well.
Michael's Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

When May-May arrived she spoke to my mother and everyone else, then she came straight to my bedroom where I was at and laid right beside me.

While we were just chilling having a nice conversation May-May friend Felicia came over to the house and my mother told her that we were in the room, once she got to the room Felicia also laid down on side of us and we talked half of the evening before they left to go home.

Then I called Yolande she was excited to hear from me she said she thought that I wouldn't call, and I remember asking her what would every give her that idea?

Now Yolande was very apologetic she apologized for her mother actions towards me, and then she asked me could we meet at City Park Monday evening. I told her that I was looking forward to it.

We had a little more small talk, and then we said our goodbyes and I told her I would see her later.

Whenever I would have some idle time, or nothing to do around the house. I would spend time playing with my nephews. Then I would play around with some of my hood girl friends, like there was this girl name Earline, that I was talking too as well, we were together for about two years she was not high maintenance she just wanted a little of my time and for me to bring her to work from time to time.

She was five, five nice and curvy beautiful face.

Are you keeping count? It was Earline, Rolaine, Joan, May-May, Yolande, I have not gotten to Bernadette yet, or the other ones that was just a hit and run, just for fun thing.

I might not include them in this book because I am just trying to allow you the opportunity to enter into what was once my life, and how far I have come. “Back to the story”

Yolande and I would finally have our time to shed light on some things; we would meet at our usual spot in City Park, when she arrived she asked me to come and sit in her car and I did.

She kissed me and I accepted her kiss with mine, I can tell she was a little nervous, she was holding my hand the whole time as she was talking to me, she apologize again for what had transpired.

Moreover, that is when she dropped the bomb on me, she told me that she was married and on top of that, she has a little girl that was eight months old.

She told me that her and her husband was on bad terms. She told me that she had gotten married at a young age. She was in her senior year at high school when this older guy use to come around, and that he pretty much had swept her off her feet and one thing lead to another, and she had gotten pregnant and had a baby girl.

I asked her what she was going to do, she told me that she didn’t know, but she also told me that she wanted to be with me, and I remember telling her that I didn’t feel comfortable about what she was asking of me. I asked her why she just didn’t tell me this when we first met?

She told me that she was afraid that I would not want to talk with her.

Now if you recall at first she told me that she was not looking for anything, and I told her as well that I didn’t want anything but a friend, she threw that in my face as well so we both had our own agenda.

Yolande also told me that her husband was putting his hands own her, now this made me mad, a man putting his hands on a female beating her, now I am getting sympathetic for her because she is crying now.

Therefore, I immediately hug her, and she starts to caress me, she lays me down, stretches me out on her front seat of her car, and can you believe it? I told her to hold up baby we need to take things a little slow; now I knew she was not having sex with her husband because she wanted to, have sex badly.

I asked her what her daughter name was. She told me her name was Yana; she named her after this super model from Africa.

I asked her what was her husband name and she told me his name was Raymond, and that he was the head chef at this restaurant in the French Quarter, for chef K-Paul, and that he travels a lot with K-Paul, to places like New York, and where every else he was needed.

After that meeting with Yolande, she definitely had me then; I do not know if she knew it or not, as time went on she would eventually invite me over to her home, she gave me the directions to this house off Napoleon and Claiborne.
Michael’s Life Time Memories
By Michael Brown

I recall some of the conversations with Yolande on the phone she would be upstairs talking with me while her husband would be outside working on his car, she had described the house, and the street to a tee, once I pull up, she invited me in I must tell you, I was very uncomfortable.

She immediately brings me to the bedroom we began to make love for the first time, after we finish I cleaned myself off and I told her that I had to go. Moreover, she was okay with it to I do not think she was comfortable either, she told me to call her soon as I was to get home.

Once I got home because I went straight there, I call her up and she told me that I made it home quick.

We talked for a good while on the phone, she asked me about our encounter, I told her the truth that I did not enjoyed it, but next time would be better.

But I must be honest I had never felt this way before about a women, you see it was something special about this one maybe because she’s a women, and she carried herself different than anyone I knew.

This was the kind of woman I had dreamed about. I was hook so it was too late to turn back now, she played her cards just right, and she sprung the husband and the daughter on me after I was feeling her.

Time went on everyone was happy all of my women were satisfy, I am juggling all these women and no one is suspecting anything.

Yolande and I would start hanging out more than usually. I would bring her to my house quite often. I would introduce her to everyone in the family. We would eat together watch television and we would be snuggled up together. My mother and sister started seeing a change in me also, they never seen I like this before I was smitten and I felted in love with her daughter as well.

Now no one else would ever come to my house and chill with my family and me, only other would come by and chill would be May-May. However, once May-May found out that Yolande and I was spending great dill of time together she allowed me to have my space and besides, she was very busy with her career.

I can recall one time Yolande and Yana spent the weekend with me. While we were sleeping one morning, someone was knocking on my bedroom window and calling my name. I am hearing May-May calling me. I played as if I was asleep, Yolande woke me up and asked me who was the sandy color haired Japanese looking girl that was knocking on the window? Moreover, how does she know where my bedroom was?

I told her that she was a friend of mine, and Yolande knew that she could not possibly get upset knowing her predicament being married.

I would have a lot of time on my hands, at some periods, when I guess Yolande was trying to take care of her home or what was left of it, and this would be the perfect time for me to enjoy my other friends.

I and May-May would go out a lot, I would take her to the rain forest on top of the Hilton Hotel, for some reason when I and May-May would go out, we were always dress alike and have on matching colors.

Rolaine would come home from school and she would invite me to family picnics, everything was going good.

Yolande would eventually leave her husband and started staying with her grandparents, and that is when our relationship took off. I decided to take a chance on love.
Taking a chance on love

I decided to take a chance on love. I was willing to stop hoeing around for this one woman, and I spent every chance I got with Yolande and her family, her mother would come around and finally accepted me, we never mention that day when she had some choice words for me, I guess she seen that her daughter really was serious about me.

Yolande brothers and aunts, uncles, and her father were supportive of us, Yana was my heart, and her grandparents accepted me. I can recall Yolande grandmother calling for me on her dying bed, she wanted to talk to me, and she talked with Claudette. She made me promise her that I would take care of her granddaughter, I told her that I would and we cried and that was the last time that I seen her alive.

I and Yolande was together almost every day, I don’t think either of us had a job for at least two to three years before we woke up, we weren’t hurting for anything we were enjoying life.

Some of her friends were envy because we had it all beautiful car nice clothes kept money we were wearing matching Gucci watches, we are freshly manicure gong to concerts movies going out to eat traveling to different states.

We traveled to Augusta Georgia, my mother, Yana, and Yolande and I, we visited my sister Kathryn and Willie and my niece Keshun, this was our first time seeing Keshun, she was a good baby, and she was born in Germany.

I would show Yolande a whole other side of things she enjoyed being around my family, Yana was growing up, and she was having a ball, we kept Yana with us all the time, when we roll out, Yana was right there with us, my nephews and my mother all was in love with Yana.

On our way home from Georgia once we got in the car at Kathryn’s house and pull out of the drive way Yana went straight to sleep she didn’t wake up until I was pulling up in our driveway, it took me seven and a half hours to get home.

I would began to take Yolande on some of my runs to Baton Rouge, and we would have a ball, I took her to a Halloween party everyone had to wear costumes my car club was invited to this party, the party was located in Baton Rogue.

Around this time I had introduced Yolande to a lot of my friends, and also I thought it would be a good idea if I introduced her to my home girl Karen, you remember I mention her she was the only female in our crew she had the blue and black Z-28.

I can recall on this one particular trip we were about twenty deep we were just outside of LaPlace in St. John the Baptist Parish, when we pull on side of the interstate and I ran to every car, and gave them some cocaine to snort.

My girl did not want to ride with Karen even though they were friends my baby wanted to be with me all the time.

Now Karen and Yolande had become real close, they got so close I could not trust Karen any more, I had to be on my best behavior around her whenever Yolande was not around seems like she would tell Yolande everything.

She would tell her whatever I was doing around the neighborhood, who I would be talking to around the house; I guess it was a girl thing.

I would eventually get the shock of my life Yolande’s mother, would invite me to thanksgiving dinner at her house, it was about a month away before thanksgiving day, I decided to go shopping on my own Yolande didn’t know I was going shopping, I had to make an impression.

While I am trying to do the right thing by Yolande I knew I had to let these other women go, I could not afford to hurt this women she have been through so much already and she doesn’t need someone to play games with her.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

I am going to interrupt this chapter for the time being to expound on something that took place while Yolande life and I was shaping up for better or worst.

My friend Reginald came home from the military, now this was one of my real closest friends, I started spending a little time with him we haven’t seen each other in about five years.

Now Reginald older brother Joe was station in Germany at the same company that I was at, he came home on leave and bought a brand new Z-28 it was grey and black with blue trimming, he had fifties and eights on it, he also put some nice sounds in it and put a kit in the transmission.

He thought that his car was so fast we would race a couple of times he thought that my car was just for show, he did not know that I was beating everything around.

So I politely took his money on several occasions, Joe would leave to go back to Germany and he would leave his car to his brother Reginald, so now we have another Z-28 in our club.

I and Reginald would ride all the time by ourselves, Reginald and a girlfriend of his who had suppose to have been waiting on him to get out of the army were going to get married.

She was a manager at D.H Holmes department store, and she was always giving Yolande and me all kind of perfumes and colognes.

Reginald did not know that she was always calling me on the phone. She was trying to win him back, because she had move on while he was away, I try to convince my partner that she dump the dude, when he came back home, that to give her another try, because I liked ole girl, she was our partner she was like my sister.

Reginald would try. I had convinced him to just go out with her one time and see if the chemistry were still there, I would purchase four tickets to the purple rain concert with prince and Shelia. E.

It would be Yolande and Sheleata, and Reginald, and I; we would take one car to save on gas and parking. Once I informed Yolande that we would be going to the prince concert she was ecstatic, she told me that she wanted to go shopping for something to wear, and that whatever she gets, it has to be purple.

Reginald father had a boat, it was something like a 34 footer, now that we were grown we would take the boat out by ourselves we would go fishing all day long.

On some days we would go water skiing; we would put the boat in the lake and ride the lake, the same lake that we would have our car shows.

After the prince concert, Reginald had made up his mine he could not get past the fact that sheleata did not wait for him, after all the promises he had made to her and the sacrifices he went through, he just could not be with her anymore.

Sheleata would continue to call me and cry on the phone, I felt so bad for her but I knew my partner when his mine is made up that is that.

After a while I guess Sheleata got over it, she stop calling, and we never seen each other again.

One day I and some of my friends were standing outside chilling and rolaine and tammy pull up in Tammy’s Z-28, she had a red one trimmed in black and grey with t-tops, Tammy had received the car from her parents, it was a graduation present, the car was awesome it was beautiful.

Anyway, they pull up smoking on a joint laughing, I told my friends to excuse me and that is when Tammy asked me where was Troy, you remember Troy?

He’s the one with the fire bird well anyway Tammy and Troy were an item, but Troy was not treating her right, this women had just went shopping and bought him some clothes, but he was hoeing around somewhere else, but who am I to talk, I had no room to say anything.

Reginald would ask me to introduce him to my friends I introduced him to my girl rolaine then I introduced him to Tammy now Tammy and rolaine are best friends and they are next door neighbors.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

We would double date, go to Audubon Park and the Zoo Tammy was going to nursing school, Rolaine would finally graduate from LSU. Rolaine took a job at the Coca-Cola Company; she was one of the young prestigious new scientists to mix the formulas for the Coca-Cola and PepsiCo products.
Now I am seeing lest and lest of Rolaine. That was a good thing all I wanted was the sex anyway. Reginald and Tammy started hitting it off pretty well they were always thanking me for introducing them to each other.
Every time when I would pull up at Rolaine house Reginald would be next-door at Tammy’s, we would back our cars up together where the back bumper would touch each other every night that is where we would be.

*

I know you are wondering about Yolande, but we are still together we just stayed on different sides of the river I was on the west bank and she was on the east bank in Holly Grove, the seventeenth ward.
When Yolande and I were not, together I would still play the field but I am trying to do right by Yolande.
Yolande would finally get her own place right off of Carrolton on Calhoun she had gotten this apartment, her family had. Her two aunts and uncles lived in the front of this big double house.
One aunt and uncle lived on one side and another on the other side, and Yolande lived in the back in a nice spacious apartment.
She was so happy. Now I was hardly ever home because I did not have an excuse now, she always wanted me with her, and when I tell her that I have to go and check on the home front, she would tell me that her and Yana was coming too.
So now, all my side women are getting upset. Because I am not making time for them, and besides that, I am flaunting this woman around, and no one knows anything about her.
Now while all of this was going on. I would be better acquainted with Yolande family. Her brothers and I would eventually get real coo. We would start hanging out a lot; I would still get away some days because I was not trying to move in with Yolande. I wanted my space, and I thank she really wanted hers as well. Besides, she never had a lot of time by herself, since her divorce.
Some days I would take Yana with me and just give Yolande time for her, Yana was my daughter she was crazy about me as well.
Thanksgiving Day would arrive. We would leave Yolande’s apartment and go over to her, mother’s home where all their relatives would be Roslyn would be there as well Roslyn is Yolande first cousin, and we are cool, we have a good relationship. This was someone that I could talk to about everything and she always kept it real with me.
She would come to help me out later in life.
Once we got to Yolande mother’s house, they were waiting on us so they said, everyone was introduced and I’m noticing that everyone is checking me out, everyone except the ones I already knew. Yolande mother and her sister in laws had the beam on me, what surprised me was Yolande’s mother asked me to sit at the head of the table, I was dumbfounded, I politely accepted and she gave me the honor of carving the turkey.
That was a wonderful jester that Yolande mother had did for me she made me feel at home, from then on I was always at her house cutting grass washing her car are just hanging out.
The funny thing is, Yolande Uncle Willie was one of my father’s’ friends, and they use to work together at Universal Life Insurance Company, Him and his daughter use to come by the house when we were little.
His daughter would stay in the car in front of our house while he run inside and he would tell me to get in and keep her company, and soon as I would get in the car she would attack me, just start kissing all on me. Small world this is, Yolande first cousin, we never told Yolande about our child hood escaped.

As the night would whine down on that thanksgiving night let me share this crazy shit I was doing, by then Yolande knew what I was doing, she has met all my relatives, she knows who is doing what, we also have visited my father’s roots where he was born and raise, she knew everyone and everyone knew her.

Now while we are still at Yolande’s mother house on this thanksgiving night, we are all watching a movie, Yolande brothers they are asking me to break them off something because ever time when I came over I would give them something, are Yolande would give them something.

I pulled out a bag of cocaine and gave it to one of my in laws, and they would take turns going in the bathroom to snort and then come out looking crazy as hell, I did not go in there, but I was the reason it was taking place in her house.

The Lady I know was not a fool she was a schoolteacher very intelligent, besides that she was a beautiful women and I knew this is how Yolande would look eventually.

The life I was living was fast and dangerous.

As time went on everything was going well Reginald is with Tammy, Troy doesn’t have any bad feelings about Reginald with her, matter of fact Troy hooks me up with one of his cousins, we take his cousin and his new girl friend to the holiday inn, and we spent a night getting high and screwing all night.

Did I feel badly after that? Nope, I was just that messed up in the head, I was with a good women, but it just did not dawn on me to man up and do the right thing.

My sister Claudette would have another child, she would deliver a baby girl her name, Lanica, I can recall the night my sister went into labor, and she was brought to Oschener hospital, Greg and I would hook up and go to the Hospital.

While Claudette was in labor it was noting for us to do but wait, so we decided to go outside we went to the car drove across the street to Burger King when we came out of Burger King, we toast with a big fat joint congratulating the birth of my beautiful niece.

I was so excited when I got home I called Yolande and told her the news and she said that tomorrow we would go and purchase her something.

Lanica was a beautiful baby, and she still is beautiful today, I would eventually play a big part in my nephews and niece life and I enjoyed every minute of it.
Drama

As you already know all good things must end. I remember this day so well; it had to be around eleven thirty in mornings. Rolaine called me and told me that she needed to talk to me that it was very important. She asked me was I busy and I told her to come on to the house that I am not busy.

When she got there, she was so excited. She says baby guess what? I am like what is up? She says baby I am pregnant, I am like, pregnant!

Right away I say it’s not mine and she tells me to stop being silly, and I tell her again it’s not mine, and then she pulls out the medical papers from her Doctor saying that she is pregnant.

She started crying, and I do not do anything but look at her stupid, she gets back in her car and leave and go home.

Around this time I am tripping because I’m thinking about Yolande and Yana I didn’t want to hurt them, and like I said before, I was not feeling Rolaine like that, she was a beautiful fine young lady, but I was in love with Yolande, she had my heart.

Rolaine told me that she was going to keep the baby, I stop having anything to do with her, and she would start crying to my partner Reginald, the same way that his girl used to cry to me.

But like I said I took a chance on love and I was not going to be denied, Rolaine father was angry with me he wanted to shoot me if I didn’t handle my responsibilities as a man and claim my child, so I ducked him every chance I got.

Oh the drama has just begun Yolande tells me later that she is pregnant. I could not believe that this was happening to me. I was not ready to have kids. I really was not and Yolande was not ready to have another child so soon either. I understood that. So we decided on an abortion. We decided not to tell anyone, I took Yolande to Planned Parenthood she felt bad for a while, for a couple of weeks I had to be very careful with her because she was crying a lot because of the baby.

In addition, guess what? May-May comes by and tells me that she is also pregnant. Now I am tripping hard; I am thinking somebody is playing games.

Now I told you how I felt about May-May. I still care about her to this day; I was in love with her and Yolande both.

May-May had become very ill, I was worried about her because she was so small, and you know how Japanese women looks so fragile, the doctor told her that she was going to have to be on bed rest the entire time that she was pregnant that it was going to be a difficult pregnancy.

I decided that we were going to keep this baby and I was going to deal with whatever the circumstances may be.

May-May would stay in the hospital I would go home and check on things while she is on bed rest.

Then I would get a message that Rolaine had a miscarriage, she had a slight mental breakdown, from stressing out, and she blamed me for what had happen.

However, later I heard that she was lifting some furniture and was straining, and that is what cause the miscarriage.

Things were working out in my favor, so I though as time went on, my baby that May-May was carrying die, May-May was diagnose with cancer in the uterus and the baby did not survived.

As I reflect on my life, I think constantly of my ignorance, the life that I once lived, and I am so ashamed of my actions, I ask God to forgive me.

Today I wonder about those children that I could have had if I would have been supportive.
Michael & Yolande

Things were going great in our relationship; since I have gotten rid of some baggage I was dealing with.

You could not tell me that I was not in love with Yolande, I had never felt this way before in my life about a female, and we would try to spend every day together.

Now I have not put the drug life away yet, and I was still up to my old ways, around this time Bennie have graduated from southern university, and have relocated to Houston Texas with his sister Connie.

My father also had an apartment in Houston; he had another family there as well, and I had a couple of friends that were enrolled at TCU, and the University of Houston.

Then there was Yolande girl friend, Erma, now Erma had a sister, who also stayed out there in Houston, and she was having this big party and she wanted us to come.

The timing was perfect my father was going to be in town in Houston, so I thought it would be great to see him, and my friend Bennie had just open up a computer store in the Galleria shopping mall and we were invited to the grand opening.

Therefore, we decided to go out there for at least the whole week we would leave early Friday morning, we also decided to rent a car so we would have more room.

It would be, I, Yolande, Erma, my friend Moon, and Michael, now my friend Michael also had a brother that was enrolled at the University of Houston.

We rented a nice four door luxury sedan, I called my father and told him that I would be out his way soon; he was excited that I was coming.

My father gave me the directions to get to Houston Texas the back way through the swamps that would save me at least an hour and a half.

My father knew all the back ways being a truck driver he knew how to avoid checkpoints and weight stations.

Around this time I had also decided to try and get my life right, are at least play the role, I was going to this technical school, and I was also working at Saint Vincent’s, the finical aid department founded me a job while I was in school, I was going to Air co technical school.

We had a nice time in Houston it only took me four hours to get there using the directions that my father had giving me, only thing about the directions my father gave me was you had to make sure that your vehicle was up to part because we were going straight through the swamps.

Long highways with nothing on them no gas stations are anything just the swamps.

Our first stop was my father’s, he had a nice fully furnish apartment on the second floor of this huge complex, in the hood.

The minute we got there, I was introduced to my father’s girl friend. She was a young woman, she was very attractive, and we all had to use the bathroom from the long drive everyone was telling me that they had to use the bathroom but I kept telling them that we were almost there to just hold it for a little while longer.

My father’s girl friend asked us if we wanted something to drink, they had this beautiful bar stock with all sorts of liquor.

We gladly accepted the offer; my father was always messing with Yolande every time that he was around her, he also was ecstatic when I told him who her uncle was, you recalled I told you that Yolande uncle and my father use to work together.

My father was very excited and happy to see me with women it was as if it made him proud.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Now my father had just brought this new jaguar, I guess he bought it for this woman, but while we were refreshing up getting ready to go to the university to meet up with my friends my father asked me to give him my keys to the car.

Why he wanted my keys I do not know, he and his girl had the new jag outside.

I gave him my keys, I was not thinking at all, once I gave him the keys he told me that they would be right back, him and his girl.

My father asked if we wanted something to eat and I asked everyone if they would like anything everyone agreed on pizza.

Now I had forgotten that I had dope stash in the car I would not want my father to find this out, I was to drop this off to someone.

When my father and his friend arrived back, my father called me in the room to talk with me in private. That is when he told me to be careful here in Texas. He told me that I don’t want to get caught in Texas with drugs, he told me that the laws in Texas are different than any other states, that they would hide my black ass for a long time if I were to get caught in their state being that I am and out of Towner.

He also told me that he dump my ashtray because it was full of roaches from smoking weed.

Now I really thought my father would be upset with me, I guess he knew what I was doing since it was his family I was trafficking for, he also would show me a place in the vehicle to stash my product.

After we ate it was time to leave, I had already call Bennie and told him to meet us, he was not too far from where we were we were around this place that they call strawberry fields in the fifth ward.

My boy Bennie was doing good he caught this school teacher, and besides that he have twin daughters.

Once Bennie arrived I told my father that I loved him gave him a hug he gave me a couple of hundreds and then he reminded me to be careful again.

We were on our way to Bennie place, we would spend the night with him and then we would go to the Greek show at the university and then the next day we would go to his grand opening at the Galleria.

The whole experience was a blast we all had a good time everyone had a chance to be acquitted with his or her siblings and family and friends.

This would not be the only time we would visit Houston I would take the Camaro out to Texas on at least two more occasions.

I can recall this one occasion where it started out as a disaster. Yolande and I got into it. We were at Erma’s sisters house having a good time partying I had to make a run, when I got back, I see this dude all over my girl, he’s holding her hand I just snap and go off. I embarrassed her and myself that night I was not thinking.

My perception was that she was flirting, but later I found out it was no such of thing, after I have made an ass out of myself it was time to go to this party we were all invited to.

I refused to go because I am still tripping. I tell them to all go and have a good time. Yolande was telling me that we came all this way to have fun and now I did not want to come. Really, I was handling business that was the real reason I came out here, but I would not tell her the reason.

I stayed at the house and there was a nice young woman who also decided to stay behind, she witness the whole incident that sent me ballistic.

Before Yolande would leave to go with everyone to the party I would lay down some rules with her in private, I told her that I trusted her, and that to be back here know later then two am and if she needs me to call me, I also told her to not in no way slow dance with anyone.

I know, I know, what you are thinking I am having controlling issue.

Now while everyone is gone to the party this nice young lady who I’m left with to keep me company was this beautiful intelligent person who had a nice conversation with me about relationships, she told me that she understands and that she knows that I am in love with Yolande and then she asked me was this my first.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

I told her that I never felt like this before about a woman for some reason I could talk to this young lady about everything that I was going through. *I will explain everything that I was going through in a later chapter.*

I actually cried on the young woman shoulder she was so understand, I cried myself to sleep, next thing I remembered, was Yolande wakening me up telling me that she is back.

The following morning I and Yolande got up before everyone else to settle the tension that was between us we had a nice talk, and then we decided to go for a morning swim. Where I would apologize to her for my actions and she also apologize for her actions, and told me that she should have handled the situation better.

Out of the blue the young woman, I was with. The one I was crying too. She appeared at the pool with a pitcher of orange juice. Moreover, two nice champagne flutes. In addition, some croissants on this silver platter. She says good morning lovebirds with a beautiful smile. She says enjoy your breakfast and I will see you all later. She puts the tray on this table and starts to walk away when we both at the same time tells her thanks. Then she was on her way the same way she had come.

Those were some of the good and bad times, Yolande and I would have. Nevertheless, don’t you thank for a minute that would be the last of bad times.
Deception

The act of deceiving, cheating, hoodwinking, misleading, or deluding *resort to falsehood and deception in avoiding the tax* b: the fact or condition of being deceived, fooled, or deluded *the magician's deception of the audience by clever tricks*

Two: a characteristic, arrangement, or situation that deceives or deludes with or without calculated intent: FRAUD, ARTIFICE, and TRICK *skilled in evasions, deceptions, and ruses*

Synonyms FRAUD, DOUBLE-DEALING, TRICKERY, CHICANE, CHICANERY, SUBTERFUGE: DECEPTION is a general term for any somewhat deceiving, by whatever methods or for whatever motive *the deception practiced by this corrupt and treacherous group* the deception in this boxer's feints* FRAUD, unless humorously or lightly used, indicates dishonest or even criminal deception.

Especially When it all falls down, now I am not going to justify my actions, because I know I was doing everything up under the sun, but I had stop cheating.

I decided to be faithful I knew my baby loved me and I knew I was in love with her. May-May and I were still friends we started having a platonic relationship she is one of my best friends today other than Kawanda.

Yolande and I did everything together some days I might be at her mothers are her father's home and she would be somewhere else, her family was my family and I and her brothers would hang out all the time.

Doing the course of our relationship, I started focusing on working more, getting a job. To cover up all the attention that I was getting, so I had to start camouflaging, I had to conceal my criminal activity.

I took a job at Toyota west bank that Greg had gotten for me I was a parts deliverer person. In addition, I would drive the customers home while their cars are being service.

You see I sensed Yolande was now feeling uneasy about my special curriculum that I was doing, because every time when we would go out, we would go around her friends, are relatives, for some reason they always asked me what did I do for a living.

Because of the car I was driving and the jewelry I was wearing, the latest clothes I was purchasing for the both of us.

I had no way to justify where I was getting all of these material things. I did not want for anything my mother would also take care of me she was the one paying my car note and insurance note and I had a master card all on the expense of my mother.

Now Yolande girl friends would always complement me on my nails how they were manicure, how nice I would be dress, and they were doing this in front of their boyfriends and husbands.

You know how this would make them feel, and they would give some sly ass remark that they do not have time for all that because they are busy working.

So eventually Yolande and I would both decide to get jobs if you recall I told you it took us both about three years before we decided to get jobs we were on a world wind, we were caught up in the fast lane.

While I am working at Toyota, I told you that this life style followed me all of my life? Well the manager was into marijuana we became friends he was selling ounces he had some pretty good smoke but I would introduce him to some weed that he just could not refuse.

He had a nice place in Metairie, what is call Fat City where he would invite me on some occasions, he also would give me favor at work sometimes he would give me special work assignments, where I might be gone for the whole day driving cars back and forward to different lots are going picking up parts.

Everything was going so good I got Yolande brother a job there as well; I was selling my manager pounds, he was happy with how things were going.
Yolande took a job at (APS) American protection services, now we are both working things are going good I even started being a substitutions teacher at Yana school.

We were involved with the (PTA) all of Yana teachers liked me, I was there at the school more than Yolande was, I would help Yana with her homework, I started taking Yana with me everywhere.

Yolande would be at work so I would have Yana with me when I am not working.

I would take Yana and my nephews and niece to the movies to the zoo.

Yolande's brother would get caught stilling at work, and loses his job, so now the heat is on me because I am the one that brought him in.

I would eventually leave Toyota west bank, I was not worrying about work because I had always had something to fall back on.

Now I was a concert fanatic I loved going to concerts and musicals’ and plays, I would travel the distance just for a show. We were always going to these events. I started noticing that every time Yolande and I would go somewhere whether it was at the fairgrounds or any kind of function Yolande would act as if she was embarrass of me.

Why I am saying this is because on every occasion that we were together walking holding hands whenever we would approach some one that she knows, she automatically disengage my hand.

Then when it was time to introduce me, she would introduce me as her friend, not as her boy friend.

So I decided to take another approach, I put a ring on her finger and asked her to marry me.

I purchased a nice engagement ring, took her to dinner, and pop the question to her and she was ecstatic.

In addition, of course, she said yes, that she would marry me, we started going to Greater Saint Stevens church, and we went to a marriage counselor for a while, we were recommended to live with each other for about a year before we get married.

You know she was still treating me the same way. Now was I just exaggerating, I do not think so, because it went on to much.

The problem that I had was that I would not speak my mind; I was always willing to sacrifice my feelings for hers. I never wanted to hurt her feelings to let her know what was going on with me.

Because I was hurting inside, I did not like the way she was treating me, I kept this entire felling bottle up inside of me.

She never told me either how she felt about me in the drug game but when she met me I was in it, now all she had to do was tell me her true feelings and I would have stop but I think it was more to it then that.

Was I just a stepping-stone or what? I do not know all I know is that I love her and I will always love her.

As time went on we were surviving, Kathryn and Willie and Keshan were still in Augusta they were soon to leave I thank they had orders to go back to Korea.

And I decided to fly up to Georgia to try and land a job and if I was to get one I would send for Yolande and Yana, we had all agreed on this plan I really was skeptical because I was in love and I didn’t want to be this far away from Yolande.

• • • • • •

You see that is my down fall when I fall in love I fall hard I always want to be in their company, I never want to be without them, I even had a problem when it was time for us to separate to go to work, call that crazy uh?

I am a very intimate passionate romantic type; I just love to be in my woman’s company, having nice stimulating conversations holding hands rubbing her feet just pampering her because I believe women are queens.

Back to the story:
Therefore, I decide to leave Yolande my car while I am away. I told her that I would call her every day and night. Once I got to Augusta, Kathryn, and Willie extended their love for me they had two cars, they gave me the keys to the grand prix that they had and told me that I could use it doing the day.

I finally got serious about my life I can picture Yolande, Yana and I living there taking care of business. I started looking for work everywhere. Every day I would go and apply for work, then I would come home and call Yolande tells her how my day was.

Nevertheless, my old nature would still kick In, I would meet this female who was also in the army I think she was a specialists four.

She was a nice looking young lady and I was thinking about this woman and my options if I were to hit it off with her she had a nice career, and then I would be able to travel all over the world with her.

We exchanged phone numbers we talked for a couple of days and then we decided to go on a date she came over to Kathryn’s house we spent the evening together we had a nice time.

Now I didn’t have anything to smoke I let everything go I told my cousins back at home that I was going to chill from the dope game and that I was going to try to get right, because I was ready to get married and live a simple quite life.

They knew me better than I knew myself that I just could not be with one woman, and that I liked fast money, but I was going to prove them wrong.

I was getting impatience looking for work. I wanted everything quick and in a hurry, my nerves started getting bad because I wanted to be with Yolande, it’s been about a month and a half, still nothing, I started venturing off to the other side of the hood were I am comfortable. I find the projects not too far from the Regency mall.

Let me explain something to you, I have been all over the world and many of these places I have been by myself. I for some reason are another would find my people who were doing the same thing that I was used to doing.

I was never scared to go out and venture off; I guess I got that from traveling at a young age with my father.

Now I know Kathryn is going to kill me for this one but I would go off, buy me a bag of weed, and ride on the Bobby Jones freeway to clear my mind. Sometimes I would go to South Carolina and turn around, and then I would put some eye drops in my eyes and then head on back home.

On some days, I would go to the gym with Willie or we would sometimes play basketball in the backyard, on some occasions, he would take me on the base where they were station at Fort Gordon to the gym to play basketball.

Now on this particular day, unexpected Yolande called me to tell me someone had stolen the Camaro from in front of her house.

She told me that she had gotten up to go to work and when she opens the door to go, the car was nowhere to be found.

Yolande was crying and I am trying to calm her down. Do not get me wrong, I was very upset; right away, I was thinking who could have stolen my car. I knew she had some thugs that were living around the corner from her, they all grew up together, but I knew how they were always sweating me when I was a round.

Now right away Yolande was telling me to come back home. She was missing me, she wanted me there because she was not comfortable being home with just her and Yana so she would tell me.

Therefore, once I told Kathryn what had happen she told me that it was nothing that I could do about it now. In addition, she was right. There was nothing I could do. However, Yolande was crying I had to go.

Kathryn asked me when did I wanted to leave I told her soon as possible she really did not want me to go.

I remember leaving the day or two after I received the phone call from Yolande, Kathryn and Willie would drive me to Atlanta-Hartsfield International Airport.
I said my goodbyes and then I thanked them both for everything. Then I was on my way back to New Orleans once I arrived back home, Yolande and her mother would pick me up at the airport, Yolande gave me a very affectionate hug and kiss, that let me know that she had missed me and was glad that I was home.

Once we got back to Yolande place her mother drop us off in front the door, I had purchased a present for Yolande, I had bought her this beautiful painting, and I had purchase something for Yana.

We had a nice conversation trying to figure out who could have stolen my car, Yolande would tell me that she had some people that lived around the corner from her come by to do some work on the car, one of the door handles had broken and she had asked them to replace it for her.

Now I really think they stole my car but I did not accuse anyone all I did was tell my baby do not worry her self about it. She thought I was mad she kept on asking me was I was fine, and to be honest with you I was okay, because I knew that the insurance company would cover my lost.

To my surprise, I called my mother to tell her to get in touch with Allstate for me and report that the car had been stolen; Yolande had gotten the police report already so we were good to go, at least I thought we were.

My mother told me that the insurance had just expired the day before and she was getting ready to renew it.

Now I am tripping, how in the world am I going to get around now? I asked my mother to rent me a car for a while until we get another car.

I decided to move in with Yolande that way we could always be together and since I was always on that side of the river.

I did not have anything going on with me. I was not hustling anymore. I was trying to do the right thing. However, every now and then, someone might want a half, or a quarter, or a bird, and that is how I would make me a little money. Other then what my mother and father were giving me.

Yolande and I was happy in spite of, we were still enjoying each other I would walk Yana to school and go and pick her up, all her teachers and classmates was fond of me. Yana was going to Lafayette elementary school that was located about seven or eight blocks from where we were staying.

We were living on Calhoun and the school was on the block of Carrollton Avenue and Lafayette.

Yolande would get hurt at work, her aunt came running to tell me the news that Yolande had felted down some stairs at work and tore her ligaments in her leg, and that they needed me to come right away.

By the time, I got ready to go out the door to pick her up her brothers were at the door telling me to come on. I left Yana with her great aunts and we were off to go and see what was going on.

We arrived, Yolande had been taken to the hospital and sure enough, she had torn ligaments in her leg, and she was in some serious pain.

Now I never did like to see anyone that I love hurting, I just couldn't stand to see anyone that I love suffering, it broke my heart to see her like this, we had to carry her to the car she would not be able to walk on her leg for at least six weeks.

I would not leave her side for the six weeks only to take Yana to school, when it was time for her to go to the bathroom to relive herself I would be there to help her I would even give her baths because she really was going through it.

Weeks later, my brother in law Greg called me up to tell me that my mother had purchased a new car it was a Mazda. Therefore, I told Yolande that Greg was coming to pick me up, that I was going to pick up the car that my mother had purchased. Now I knew the car was mine because my mother did not like to drive I was her personal chuffer, with all the benefits.

It was a nice car it would serve its purpose and besides it was free. Moreover, it was brand new.

So know I can move around again, around this time I would drop Yana at school and drop Yolande at work and then I would do my thing everything was going well.

I decided to give Yolande a break, I told her that I was going home for a while to check on things and that I wanted to give her some time alone.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

On some days I would stay home, I would go over just to run errands and then I would spend a little time with Yana and Yolande then I was headed back over the river, I also started hustling again making runs to put some money in my pockets.

One evening I was coming from Yolande’s, I was on Carrollton and Tulane I had stop at the red light when I looked to the right of me and spotted this beautiful caramel fine young lady on the pay phone at this plaza.

Now this was one of these plazas that had a Walgreens and Beauty college/cosmetology, and several more stores there. Any way I am looking at her listening to my music waiting for the light to change, when she starts pointing at me gesturing for me to come there.

When the light turned green I took a right and pull in the plaza right next to where she was on the phone.

Once I pulled up she immediately hanged up the phone, approached my passenger side door, and took it upon herself to invite herself in my car.

This woman was stunning, when I say stunning, I mean this was a Jet centerfold, and she was digging me, now this was the finest one yet, her name Bernadette.

Bernadette had to be around five nine, she had a hour glass figure now the only thing about her was that she was in love with herself she stayed in the mirror consistently admiring herself.

We had a nice relationship that lasted for about two years before we went our separate ways. From that very first day that we met, we had become lovers. She use to love just staring at her body in the nude in front on the mirror. She always wanted to make love with many mirrors around so she could see herself.

Around this time, Greg and one of his friends name Stanley had their own business G&S janitorial services, Stanley and I became real good friends thanks to Greg, Stanley had an apartment in Westwego that was called Beach Grove. He would allow me the use of his apartment whenever I wanted it. I would bring Bernadette over quite often.

Now I also introduced Bernadette to my mother, funny thing about that is my mother knew her and her mother, our mothers worked together at Veterans Memorial Hospital.

Now once Bernadette mother found out that I was Mrs., Brown son, everything was fine her whole family accepted me I started spending a lot of time with them.

Now I know that I said that I was going to be faithful to Yolande, and I was really trying to, but like I stated it was as if I was not satisfy with one woman.

Something just was not right with Yolande and it was my fault because I accepted everything as it was instead of me confronting how I was feeling I just let everything build up.

Every time I was with Bernadette, she made me feel special. She treated me how I wanted to be treated and I did not have to say anything. It was, as she knew what I needed, I am a very affectionate person, and so was Bernadette we could be driving on the highway she would rub the back of my head or rub my thigh.

She always expressed her love in so many ways and that is the very thing I do to everyone I am with that is just the kind of person I am.

Now don’t get me wrong Yolande treated me good when we were by ourselves or with her family are my family, but when every we were to go out or meet her friends in public she would not treat me the same with some of them she had her picks. Maybe if we would have talked about these things I could have gotten a better understanding. Maybe be she was not one of those women that loves to show affection in public. I do not know because I never tried to talk about it my dumb ass.

This was weighting on me some terrible and I never talked to her about how I was feeling about this, so as time went on things were going as well as can be.

Bernadette and I would still have our time together she knew about Yolande but Yolande did not know about her I knew that Yolande would not settle for this.

One day Yolande and I were visiting her cousins it was Roslyn, Debra, and Karen, I was outside cleaning my car in front of Debra house.
I had the trunk open with the music on when out of the blue one of Yolande cousins seen this bag in my trunk and decided to open it up.

Once she opens it up she says what is this Yolande. I know this is not yours, I turn around to see what she was talking about and to my surprise she’s holding up some bikinis a bottle of Ralf Laurent (RED) perfume, and a curling iron.

I was shock but I thought fast I told her that was for Claudette, I do not know if she believed me are not but it work for a while.

Once we left we were riding when Yolande started searching the car everywhere she found these pictures of Bernadette where she was half naked, Bernadette had also stash some of her rollers and brush and comb between my seats.

Yolande went off talking about that I am cheating on her riding whores in our car, I told her that the pictures were for someone else, matter of fact her brother took the rap for me and told Yolande that they were his that I had let him use the car to take this women out.

Because he did not want his fiancé to find out, you see Yolande and me, christen his daughter I am his daughters’ godfather, and Yolande is the godmother.

Did you know that she believed it hook line and sinker, that was close, I also started bringing my other women around my brother in laws, I was stupid for this one I know, but you know men always think they have to prove something, I told you that I and Yolande brothers became real close.

They had more than one woman as well I use to cover for them as well, one of her brothers girl friends wanted me so bad but I did not take the bait, I told her that I just couldn’t it was to close.

I would introduce Yolande brothers to May-May and Bernadette and Heidi, I want speak on Heidi she was murder in the French quarters, a jealous lover shot her in the head.

She was also one of my lovers, her sister also and her mother all was once my lover, that is right all three, they were a Caucasian family, we are still friends. I met their mother at a Boy George concert, we had a one-night stand, and then she introduced me to her family.

I later asked Bernadette about why she leaves her things between my seats for my girl to find. Right then I knew she was getting jealous and wanted me for herself, I really wasn’t that mad at her I was kind of glad that Yolande knew that if she didn’t start treating me right that I had options at least that’s what I was thinking.

Back to the story now I should have known not to bring any women around Yolande brothers but I wanted to show off I guess, I don’t think they told her about all the women I had because they knew I treated their sister good and then they probably knew something I didn’t.

This was all of the deception going on in our relationship, because I was angry I was really in love with Yolande and don’t forget we were about to be married or we were just fooling each other?

Now everything wasn’t all me, I can recall one time I had just gotten in from this club I’m back at home in Kennedy Heights and Yolande is at her place I called her up to tell her that I was home. I always called her whenever I came home.

I called to tell her that I was coming over, the truth of the matter was that I was horny as hell from hanging out at the club and I wanted to be with her.

She never ever turned me down before, I told her that I was coming over, she told me not to come she told me that she was sleep and that she would see me tomorrow, now I am tripping because she never told me this before.

I did not tell her what I was thinking, she did not detect that I was angry, I just simply told her to have a good night, and that I love her and hung up the phone.

I politely got in my car and headed over the river, it is around two thirty in the morning so they did not have any traffic on the highway so I made it there in about twenty minutes.

Once I got there I grab my forty-five, because I carried my gun where ever I went, now do not forget how I described the house for you the last time.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Yolande aunts lived in the front and Yolande lived in the back, so I walked to the back of the house, now the front and back door both have screen doors on them.

Now that I am there, I knocked on the front door, no one comes to the door, so I knock again, then she finally opens the door, but keeps the screen door close, and she says I told you not to come that I am sleep so I say girl stop tripping and open this door.

To my surprise, she was serious about not opening the door so about this time, I am getting mad as hell and I am high from early tonight.

Therefore, I ask her one more time she still refused. So I snatched the screen door off the hinges, and politely let myself in only to find a half naked man in the living room with a bucket of champagne on the table the lights turn down low, music playing softly.

This guy was big in muscle size he didn’t have his shirt on, so right away I ask Yolande what in the hell is going on, you see I knew now why I have been feeling the way I have because she was stepping out on me.

Therefore, while I am fussing with Yolande this dude asked her was she all right. That is when I lost it, I told him to get his ass out of here that this is my women and then that is when he told Yolande dam baby you told me that you did not have a man. I then pull my forty-five out of my back. Cock it to put one in the chamber and told him to get to stepping.

He ran out of the house now Yolande is crying telling me that she is sorry. I slap the shit out of her, this was the first time I ever hit a female in my life. I do not know what made me do that it just happen. I am thinking it is because of everything that was bottled up in me, the way I was being treated, so when this happen I exploded.

I asked her why and she told me nothing happen it was not what it looked like she told me he was a stripper and that she was having an audition for her girl friend bridal shower.

She told me that she deserved what I did to her. Because she knew, she was wrong for lying to me. However, she also told me not to ever hit her again. I cried like a baby that night for putting my hands on her, which is why she left her husband because he was putting his hands on her.

Now my dumb ass is doing the same thing we made up that night and made passionate love to each other, that is when I decided to go out on a limb and asked Yolande to move in with me.
Chapter 22

Going out on a limb

I decided to go out on the limb for love one more time. I asked Yolande to move in with me over the river since Claudette, and her family was moving out. They were on their way to California.

And my mother was never there and besides they had better schools on my side of the river for Yana and it was a great place to grow up for a kid.

We decided that we would save our money and get married; now you know I had to stop messing around for sure now.

I was willing because Yolande is whom I wanted to spend the rest of my life with. We found a nice school for Yana to go to I would also substitute teach there as well, I was also part of the PTA.

For the first time in our relationship, I started being faithful. Yolande would give her apartment to her brother, after Claudette left again. The house was not the same, but I must say Yolande made it a home.

Now around this time I started hustling again for my cousin, the money was too good, so I went to traveling again to Houston and southern and Gambling State University.

It was this one time when Yolande’s friend came to stay with us for a week and we decided to paint our room we decided to feather paint the room we were all having a good time putting paint on each other just having a ball.

For some reason I told Yolande that, I was going to the store around the corner. When I got to the store, one of my friends asked me to bring him to McDonalds, I told him that I had to get home that I was in the middle of painting and that my girl was waiting on me and besides we have guess at the house. He told me that it would not take long.

Now once we got there this white guy he knew came from Baton Rouge and he wanted five bricks (KILOS) of cocaine now remember I’m painting I have paint all over me.

I did the math called my cousin gave some math numbers seen that I can make me five grand off each one not counting if I chop it up.

So I did what anyone else would do who was about their hustle, I got the money made the run all this took was about forty-five minutes. Once he got his product, I told my boy that I would tighten him up when we get to the house.

Now we are back at the McDonalds and before I could take off the white boy throws the package back through my passenger window and I like what is wrong with this dude?

He is paranoid and tells me to take the package for him to Baton Rouge. Then he tells me that he would give me an extra grand and that I can keep one of the bricks. I am asking my boy is this dude for real and he told me that he was cool. I was a little nervous I thought that I was being set up.

Therefore, I immediately stash everything and he told us to call him at the number that he gave me when I arrive.

Therefore, I went straight to the gas station and purchased a full tank of gas and then I was on my way to Baton Rouge I did not go home to tell Yolande anything I just took off once I got there everything went smooth.

We met the white boy gave him his merchandise and he gave me a grand and I gave my boy five hundred and I also would put some work in his hands as soon as we got back home now it took me two days to get home we left Friday and I wouldn’t get back home until Sunday morning.

I never called home, not one time, I was so caught up in the moment, we went by these females house and chopped the dope up and then you know one thing led to another.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

My mother had to be at work at seven thirty that Sunday morning and I had told her that I would bring her, I’m tripping so it was time to head on back while on our way back we were being followed or we were just paranoid this car followed us until we got to LaPlace, Louisiana.

The minute I got home, I drop my boy off and I told him I would get with him later. Soon as I pull in the driveway I hurried up into the house it was about six forty five in the morning.

Soon as I open, the door and walk to the dining area Yolande threw a spatula at my head she was cooking breakfast in the kitchen I move out the way just in time.

She was mad as hell I told her that I would explain ever thing to her as soon as I get back from taking mom to work, then as I was walking out of the house I threw her a brown paper bag with twenty-five grand and told her to do something with it. This was my biggest lick yet by myself, I would take care of my boy who turned me on to it later that day.

She is asking me what you want me to do with it. As I am going out the door I tell her that it’s yours and close the door behind me, my mother is upset with me she told me I should have call. I told her I know and she told me to be careful son.

After I drop my mother off at work, I hurried home to face the music. I arrived back at home Yolande was still upset, and she was using this to her advantage. I was tired and sleepy she would not let me go to sleep, she was already planning on how she was going to spend the money, we would eventually make up and go on a splurge.

I was not doing this on the regular; it was just when someone wanted some serious weight, the trip part about this was Yolande decided that she wanted to be a police officer, so I encourage her to pursue it.

Yolande past the test and was getting ready to go off to the police academy, I would continue to help with Yana at school, I also would drop Yolande off at the academy every mornings, some days I would be there around all these police with all of this cocaine on me it was a trip.

Now all the police are getting familiar with me. They recognize me by my car. So where ever I would go they would sometimes pull me over to talk to me are invite me to a party or something. I could tell Yolande was not comfortable because of what I was into. Now before she decided to be a police we were getting high together sometimes I would have so much cocaine we would take cocaine baths.

This is where we would pour cocaine all over us and have mad sex. Now Yolande knew all of my connection, and they knew her as well and what she did for a living.

But I must say it turn out to be sweet for awhile Yolande had some nice female officer friends and they were always inviting us over for dinner. This is when things started getting a little flaky.

Every time when we would visit with them it was the same things, where do you work? How are you able to afford this and that?

For some of the strangest reasons I would always run into some of her co-workers. The whole police force knew me. my friend Moon and I was riding one night we stop off at Timesavers on Broadway and Claiborne to pick up a six pack of beer soon as we got back in the car we was getting ready to roll a joint, when these blue lights pull up behind us.

We hurried up to put everything up soon as we put the weed up, it was Pat now Pat was a real good friend of Yolande’s we would go over to her house and eat dinner a lot her husband and I would always go outside and get wasted.

They were cool with that as long as we did it at home, Pat would tell me that night to be careful and to hide that beer that was in my backseat, and then she asked me where was Yolande and I told her that she was at home.

On some nights, many officers would stop by the house and split up money and drugs that they had confiscated from drug dealers.

Yolande finally became a full fledge New Orleans police officer, (N.O.P.D). I would drop her off at the precinct and then I would go off and hustle, she gave me a police decal to put on the windshield of the car and then she would leave her police jacket in the car hanging up and everyone could see it. Now they thought I was in law enforcement.
This was perfect and I would use this to my advantage, Yolande was still not treating me the way I needed to be treated so I thought maybe because of the hustling I was doing. Therefore, I decided to stop this time for good. You remember my friend Reginald well Reginald was working for Diamond Foods driving trucks and he told me they were looking for a driver, so I took him up on this. In addition, I applied for the job and was hired.

Yolande was happy, now she would pick me up from work her and her mother. I did not need the car any more I would let Yolande take the car to work and I would ride with Reginald but for some strange reason Yolande always wanted to come and pick me up.

The job was a good job I traveled to Mississippi and Baton Rouge, delivering produce to all the Chinese restaurants and I was good at my job this is what I was train to do with my father.

The owners at the restaurants grew fond of me so on the days I was off from work, I would bring Yolande and Yana to some of the nicest restaurants. They would feed us free of charge.

Our relationship would finally take it’s told I will never every forget this night, it would change my life forever, it was 1988 New Years Eve we were invited to a new years eve ball black-tie affair.

It was at the Holiday Inn banquet room. That was located on the top floor of the building, now you remember how I told you that she always introduced me as her friend not as her fiancé or her boy friend. I had a problem with that but it was my fault because I never told her how that made me feel.

Every time we were together if it wasn’t with her family or the ones that she was close to she would act like she was a shame of me or she just didn’t want them to know that we were together in that kind of way.

Now this was my perception and I prayed to God that I was wrong but I could never shake this feeling.

On this particular night, my frustration would come out once more.

Soon as we got to the Ball, I order a drink. Yolande disappeared, one minute I spotted her talking to some of her friends. I knew the girl who stayed down the street from me we all grew up together her name was Dianne. She kept me company all night her fiancé was there as well and he was back and forth now he knew me as well he was Yolande cousin friend and co worker they were about to get married and move to Washington DC.

I’m looking for Yolande not trying to be obvious because it’s getting close to midnight and I just knew for sure that she would at least find me before twelve, sure enough soon as the countdown started she appeared as we counted down I am still angry.

We hugged and wish each other a happy new year with a kiss, and then I was ready to leave by the time we got to the car we were arguing as we got in the car and I drove off headed home I’m mad as hell. I am telling her how I felt she did not want to hear it she starts yelling at me and then she threw her drink in my face while I was driving.

Now I am trying to see where I was going the gin that she was drinking was really burning my eyes, I told her that I was going to beat her mother-fucking ass. I was mad every feeling of hurt and the way she had been treating me came out this time.

I got off the highway and got on this quiet dark street, I stop the car, through the car in park, ran around to the passenger side seat, pulled her out by her hair, and beat her ass until I caught myself and snapped back to reality.

Right then I knew I had fucked up our relationship would never be the same again when we got home she told my mother what I had done my mother was very disappointed with me and I was disappointed with myself.

I know you say how can you love someone and then turn around and put your hands on them, but let me tell you that I love this women I would die for this women and I still love this woman I pray for her every night I pray that she is happy.

And it’s been over twenty five years since I’ve seen or heard from her I have had messages about her asking about me I never seen her or any of her family.

In addition, I am always wondering about Yana last time I heard that she was asking about me as well. I pray that when I get out that I can at least find them and apologize to them.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Now back to the story. Yolande called her cousin and told her, what I had did, and I felt so ashamed an embarrassed but the damage was done. I tried and I tried to get her back, but I knew she was gone this time, she asked me to allow her and Yana to continue to stay at the house until she can save enough money to get her an apartment.

Of course, you know I told her that she can, she would not allow me to sleep with her she always had somewhere to go after work now, and she would leave Yana with me, she knew that she had me now she was pulling my chain.

I would let her take the car, every now and then she would come home and wake me up and throw herself on me to make love with me. However, it was not love anymore it was just sex.

Yana was having a birthday coming up she was turning eight years old now if you can recall I met Yana when she was eight months old that’s how long we were together my first love.

We would have a party at chucky cheese, Yana always love chucky cheese but she was afraid of the mascot.

Now everyone came to the party Yolande mother and all her brothers, aunts, cousins. It was pack full of relatives now they had one of Yolande ex-boyfriends there they were boyfriends and girl friends when they were in high school I didn’t think anything of it because her brothers were cool with him and I had met him a time are two.

While we were at the party her brothers asked me to go for a ride they wanted to get some coke, I had about a quarter of an ounce on me so we drove to the dude house his name is James Yolande Ex.

He had a place right down the street from where we were. I told Yolande that I would be right back they all knew that every time that I and Yolande brothers get together, that we always went off somewhere, they never thought anything of it, but Yolande knew what was going on but she had out grew what we were doing long time ago.

I was not in the mood so I gave them something to cook up and smoke and then we headed back to the party once the party was over we went back home.

Now as time went on the relationship I thought would get back right only to my surprise one day it was on a Saturday I was up early that morning making runs. I and a couple of my friends was smoking weed riding in the subdivision, when I decided it was time to go home.

It’s still morning time I have one of my partners with me when I pull up to my house, I noticed a truck there, a U-Haul, when I pulled in and got out of the car Yolande told me that she was moving out, and that she had gotten herself an apartment.

Therefore, my pride kicked in so I said let me help you. she told me that her dad and her brothers were on their way to help her, I said is that right, so I started loading up the truck by myself, by the time they all had arrived, I was almost finish, they were amazed how I had did all this by myself.

As I stated I was train by my father how to load and unload trucks.

Once we got everything, in the truck Yolande friend was also there James again he was going to drive the truck but they did not know where they were going. I asked Yolande where the place was.

I told them to follow me I took the truck, Yolande took my car and everyone follow me.

I got there in no time at all, it was a nice place once we finish unloading the truck it was getting close for me to go and pick my mother up from work.

I talk with Yolande mother for a while, she told me to take care of myself, and that she would see me around.

Yolande brothers told me to keep coming by and holler at them. They said that we are still cool and for me not to be a stranger.

Now before I would leave to go and pick up my mother Yolande would tell me to come in the bed room, so I go to see what she wanted, and she starts kissing me and then she pulls away when Yana walks in, and then she tells me that she doesn’t want to confuse Yana. Now my dumb ass still don’t confront the things that she is telling me, I’m saying to myself what she means confusing Yana.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Therefore, it was time to go so she asks me would I still come by and take her to work and drop Yana at school until she can find a school that is closer to where they are living. Of course, I would say yes and she knew it, because she knew that I love her but I really think she did not love me like that.

Now I knew she had some feelings but like May-May had told me that she wasn’t for me and my mother told me I was just a stepping stone for her to rebound on from her marriage.

After a while, I did not have to pick up Yana because Yolande had found a school for her and Yolande had bought her a new car.

I remember crying to my mother telling her that I had lost her; I knew it and my mother would tell me that she knows it hurts and in time, I would get over it.

Companionship is a very precious and expensive commodity because it can be bought only with the one thing that seems to be so scarce: time. (Georgia O’Keeffe wrote in a letter to a friend, “to see a flower takes time, just like to have a friend takes time.”)
All by myself

After Yolande and I broke off our engagement things would never be the same. I went from bad to worst. I just didn’t care anymore about things I stop working I started doing more drugs I started whoring again.

I became careless I recall one day Reginald brother Joe came home from Germany. We decided that we would go to the third ward in the projects; I had about five hundred dollars on me, and an ounce of cocaine. We were going to purchase a bottle of water (PCP) this is what Joe was into, I remember this young woman we just happen to pick up took us to her apartment in the projects to meet her connect.

Once we got there to her place, she went straight to the back room and left us in the living area. When this dude came in the house and pulled out a pistol on the both of us. He told us to give it up, then all of a sudden two more people came in and all three of them had two pistols apiece.

They were yelling telling us to strip to take off our clothes Joe went to cursing them out, then they got mad and separated us and started pistol whipping us, they started asking me where was the dope and money.

They would find the money and the cocaine, but they would not find the (PCP), this went on for about thirty minutes I thought my life was over, we finally were freed.

We ran to the car bleeding, Joe went right to the stash and rolled him a cigarette in PCP and smoked while we were on our way back to the hood all shook up.

Now once we got back to our hood I was mad because I took a lost, not only was I mad because I took a lost I was mad because I had told myself long time ago that if someone tired to rob me they were going to have to kill me.

I thought I went out bad I was so scared but I found out that I did not no my own heart. You just never know what you would do in a life-treating situation. Now when we got back to the hood We went to the park in the neighborhood and everybody was there, we ran the story down to the crew next thing you know they were all getting strapped up to go and handle the situation for us.

When they got there the place where we had been robbed, everything was gone. It was a jack house where they set up their marks to rob them. This day we were the marks.

I would later tell my cousin Lance about it, he knew who was doing the robbing in these projects, and he was going to take care of it.

Now later on that night I was at home chilling, I was still a little spooked from early and guess who pops up? Yolande and Yana shows up and I just happen to be looking out the window when she pulls up my boys are standing guard outside because I am spook I was not taking any chances.

Yolande is talking to one of my boys, he comes in the house to tell me that Yolande is outside and she has a new car and said if I act right this can be mine, so I asked my boy what in the hell she means act right?

She comes inside now soon as she gets in she asks me if I am alright she has heard that I had gotten rob and pistol whipped that’s the talk of the hood and somehow Yolande knew and she stays way somewhere else.

She asked me to take a ride with her I really was not feeling like going anywhere with her but whom I was fooling I still loved this women I would go to the end of the world for her.

I told her what had happen. She told me I needed to stop doing what I was doing. Yana was asking me all kind of question she was so happy to see me and I was very happy to see her.

We pull in the gas station she asked me would I pump her gas, and pay for it. I told her that I did not have any money on me; she gave me some money to pay for the gas when Yana yells out the window to buy her some potato chips.

Once Yolande drop me off back at home, I would never every see her or any of her family again, I remembered what May-May had told me a while back.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

She said relationships—of all kinds—is like sand held in your hand. Held loosely, with an open hand, the sand remains where it is. The minute you close your hand, and squeeze tightly to some of it, but most will be spilled.

A relationship is like that. Held loosely, with respect and freedom for the other person, it is likely to remain intact. However, hold too tightly, too possessively, and the relationship slips away and is lost.

I was so distort I had to talk to someone I decided to go and talk with Yolande cousin Roslyn, I cried to her like a baby also I let out all of my feelings to her, I told her how Yolande had left me. Out of nowhere, Roslyn would tell me to Man Up! She told me that she knows that Yolande is her cousin, but if she left her husband for me. What would make me think that she would not leave me for someone else?

At that moment, I would dry the tears from my eyes, hug Roslyn, thank her, and tell her to take it care, and I left her standing in front of her house.

It would be only one more time that I would have any dealings with anyone from Yolande’s family, my friend Moon brother would come home from the army his name is Charlie, we all grew up together.

Now Charlie was dating this young woman in my neighborhood and he moved in with her, she had her own house, and car and she had a nice job, she was driving a grey Camaro one of the newer models.

Charlie asked me one day would I come with him to pay their car note at (GMAC) General Motors Acceptance Corporation.

The company was located in the landmark building, this is a High Rise that sits right off Interstate 10, and once we got there we check the directory to find out what floor the company was located on, it was on the eight floors.

When we got to the office, the lines were not that long I was just chilling waiting on Charlie to handle his business; the receptionist was giving him a hassle, when unexpectedly I hear someone says Michael.

And to my surprise it was Roslyn, Yolande cousin, she asked me what I was doing there, I told her I’m with a friend and he needs to make a payment and that he is having a hard time so she told the receptionist who was helping Charlie that she would take care of it.

Once she took care of the situation she told me to hang around that she was getting ready to take her lunch break and that she wanted to take me to lunch and I agree to wait and have lunch with her I asked Charlie did he mine, he replied that he was cool with it.

We had lunch on another floor in the building we set down to order Charlie and I, we had a nice time we did not mention Yolande name not one time and Roslyn also pick up the bill once we finish our meal.

After the bill was paid Roslyn and I would give each other a big hug and walk out of each other life for good, I never seen or heard from her again, but I will try and find her as well, when I am release from prison.

Summer time 1988 my nephews and my niece would come to spend the summer with my mother and me they would fly from California this would slow me all the way down because my mother was working so I had to be there for them because they were young.

I must say they arrived at the right time in my life they took my mind off Yolande and the streets, I enjoyed every minute with them.

My sister Claudette would ask me when the summer ended if she purchases me a round trip ticket to California and back home would I be willing to bring the kids back so they can get ready for school.

I did not need time to thank about this because I am the kind of person that would do anything for my sisters and nieces and nephews at the drop of a dime.

When it was time to leave Lamond, Lewayne, Lanica, and I headed to New Orleans international airport, where we would catch a nonstop flight to Oakland International Airport in California.
California

The day that we arrived in Oakland was a beautiful sunny day. When I got off the plane with the kids as we walked through the terminal I notice this big sign that said welcome home, Claudette had gave her kids a nice welcome home jester she was so excited to have her kids back home it was written all over her face.

Once we did our greetings it was time to head to the house I was busy taking in the sights, it had been a couple of years since I’ve been to Oakland, I and my father use to come out this way.

I can remember this day as if it was yesterday because this was also a life changing experience for me, on our way to the house I was sitting in the back seat looking out of the window at the pretty houses, and looking at the San Francisco Bay, inlet of the Pacific Ocean, western California. The bay, which is bordered by several cities, including San Francisco and Oakland. This song came on the radio it was a Keith Sweat song, ♪ “make it last forever”, this was my first time hearing this song I started crying no one seen me crying but that song made me think about Yolande, don’t you know still today when I hear this song it takes me all the way back to that time. I guess it is true that you never ever forget your first love.

Claudette lived in Alameda; it is linked with Oakland by a tunnel and several bridges. Its name is Spanish for “poplar grove.”

She lived right across the street from where she was station, Alameda Naval Air Station, they stay at 2500C Mayport circle, it was navy housing, it was a nice three-bedroom town house upstairs and down stairs nice back yard and front yard.

Alameda, city in Alameda County, western California, situated on islands and part of a peninsula in San Francisco Bay. Although largely residential, it has some industry, including boatbuilding and aircraft repair, and is the site of the huge Alameda Naval Air Station and a major United States Coast Guard base.

Now I had my reservations to leave to go back to New Orleans in two weeks I had confirm my flight to make sure everything was in order.

Well I and my road dog was back together again Greg only this time I was a change man, I decided to try something new, besides my pride was hurt.

Around this time I guess Greg was doing his thing he was not home a lot, so since I was there I took advantage of the blessing that was right in front of me, Claudette would treat me so well like she always did.

Now Claudette would introduce me to all of his friends she would always say this is my baby brother and she would just light up and I can see some of her friends tripping as well.

Some of her girl friends would say girl I did not know you had a brother that looks so young.

One of her girl friends I don’t know if she was just being nice are she was interested in me or what, but we got pretty close real quick. She would take me to plays in San Francisco take me out to eat, we also visited people are talking it was a daytime talk show that aired on television everyday her name was Patricia.

Claudette told me that they were hiring on the base that I needed to go to the (CPO) Civilian personal office and fill out an application, I had about a week to kill, so I took her up on it and I decided to walk to the base and fill out a couple of applications.

In About two days, I was schedule to leave for New Orleans I got a phone call from the personnel office telling me to come in for a job interview.

The next day after the interview, I would have the job if I pasted my physical, now the physical was not schedule until the following week, so I decide to stay in California and take a chance that I would get the job.

Now I was clean I had stop smoking weed I was not doing drugs I wasn’t even smoking cigarettes, the physical would be a two day event that I would pass with flying colors.
I started out making twelve, thirty-five an Hour, as equipment cleaner, degreasing, and sand blasting f16 and f14 fighter jets and other aircraft parts.

It was a great job I enjoyed it, I purchased me a walkman and began to walk to work every day, Claudette friends would come over to the house often we always had guess over.

Nevertheless, I would spend all my time with my niece and nephews I would play with them we would have a good time together, Lanica stayed up under me all the time. I remembered the times when I had to try to braid Lanica hair; I also helped her to stop sucking her finger.

I took my nephews to the department store when I got my first check and allowed them to purchase some clothes; I wanted them to have whatever they wanted.

Around this time, I was not thinking about women, all I was thinking about was getting myself together and making sure that the kids were all right, and protecting my sister.

Once I started working I notice that I was feeling better about myself some of the women at work was checking me out for some reason people know when you are from out of town there was this one female that caught my eye her name was Rose she was a nice slim chick about five four.

She was very attractive to me I really tried to seduce her, she would not bite, this went on for a while but we were good friends, she lived in Oakland, she would eventually play a big part in my life, as you will see.

As time went on, it has been a while for me to go without a companionship, I am the type of person that needs to be love and need to give love.

The navy base had beautiful professional women all over the place and the neighborhood that we were living in was very diversity. The community and the atmosphere were awesome. I just knew I would make it here.

Out of the blue while I was up stairs with the kids I think we were lifting weights listen to music Claudette holler from down stairs telling me to pick up the phone, I had a phone call, now I am wondering who could be calling, I gave know one this number I’m thinking.

I picked up the phone to my surprise, it was Yolande calling me, she asked me how was I doing, and then she asked me when am I coming back home? I told her that I am never coming back home, I told her that I had just gotten a job making twelve thirty five an hour and that I am good.

Now I know that I should have handled that a little better. However, I guess I was still hurt. But before she got off the phone I guess she got the last laugh because she told me something that would just hurt me so bad I just had to go and be by myself for awhile and cry, she told me that she was really just calling me to tell me that she was getting married.

As time went on, I replayed that conversation repeatedly in my head. I am thinking that she really wanted to see if there was anything left between us. I should have fought for her, I just gave up, I didn’t try, I acted like I didn’t care, and I guess she sense that, and said to hell with me, if I didn’t care she would not either.

I eventually put Yolande out of my mine for the time being, and tried to continue to improve my life by working and spending time with my niece and nephews and sister.

As time move on, I am getting more and more comfortable and familiar with my surroundings and I am meeting many good people.

For the first time I’m not involve with gangsters and drug dealers and addicts, and I must say that I was loving it, when you surround yourself around positive people you become positive.

I started saving my money towards purchasing me another automobile; I would spend a little time with some of my co-workers.

My co-workers that I had gotten close to was all from out of town, one was from Cleveland, Ohio and my closest friend was from Virginia Beach his name is Rico, now Rico and I would spend a lot of time together he had a girl friend whose name is Robin.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Robin was from Oakland her and Rico met in the military they both were station at fort Ore army base, the same base that my sister Kathryn was station at, my father and I would deliver at this facility back in the day.

On the weekends Rico and I would drive down to the base and kick it for a while, Rico, was always drinking whenever I went out with him to a club, I knew to prepare myself for a fight with someone because he could not control his liquor I would have to drive him home.

One night we decided to go to a concert that was held at the Oakland coliseum; it was a Mc Hammer concert with 357, Heavy D, Young Mc, when a gang fight erupted it was the bloods and the cribs and then their were also the locate rival street gangs going at it.

They cause a riot that night, which was the last time that I went to a rap concert the experience was to much for me it really frighten me I had never witness a full fledge gang war before.

Now back at work you remember I told you about the young woman that would play apart in my life. Rose the one I was attracted too, I thought that she was sexy; I just really wanted to get in her pants.

Rose would come by my work station to speak to me on server occasions and have a little small talk, I think she liked me hitting on her because she would blush ever time that I ask her out are give her a complement.

On this particular day Rose was honest with me, she told me that she had a boy friend and that I was not her type, she told me that she had a girl friend, that was single her name was Lisa.

Rose would tell me that she would tell her friend Lisa about me and get back with me the next day.

The next day at work, I found Rose and asked her she talk to her friend. She told me that she did and that her friend wanted my phone number.

Upon me giving Rose my number. I asked her what her name was. She told me her name was Lisa. I also asked her how did she look she told me that she was a nice looking young lady, she told me that she had her own house, and her own money, and had a nice job, so I asked her why she didn’t have anyone she told me that she not too long ago got out of a relationship.

Therefore, after work Rose would give me a ride out of the gate, she would drop me off at the front of Navy housing and I would walk the rest of the way, which were only a few blocks from the house.

On this night Claudette would have a Tupper ware party at the house, I told Claudette that I was going to chill and stay for the party, I am the only man there, Claudette’s friend was hosting the party her name was Tekla.

Everyone called her Tek, now this young woman was single she had three little girls they were friends with my niece and nephews.

For some reason this women caught my eyes this night she had on some spandex with some leg warmers on with a nice blouse, she had her shoes off and I notice that she had some pretty feet a nice smile and on top of that she was so fine.

I decide to purchase a travel kit from her, I really just wanted to give her some play, and I could use a travel kit because I travel a lot so this would come in handy.

Tekla would tell me thanks and, when my order comes in, she would let me know.

The next day at work Rose asked me, did I hear from Lisa? I told her no and that is when she told me that she said that she would call me, I did not push the issue because now I cannot stop thinking about Tekla.

One day I am at the house chilling, the kids were outside playing, Claudette I don’t know where she was I’m thinking she had to work late, when Tekla call to tell me that my travel kit had arrived and that she would be over in a little bit to bring it to me.

I heard a knock at the door, it was her, I told her to come in, when she came in she was looking beautiful as usually she gave me my order, and that’s when I made my move, before she left I had her phone number.

The next night I was at home, Claudette the kids and I’m thinking Corney and Shonda was there as well, now these were some of Claudette friends as well all of them were in the navy, I and Shonda became real good friends.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

On this night we were watching the Chicago Bulls I had a hundred dollars riding on the game, when Lisa finally call, we had a nice conversation, she wanted to know what was all the noise in the back ground I told her we were watching the basketball game.

We talked for about thirty minutes then she gave me her number and told me that I could call her if I wanted to, now around this time I had notice Tekla was coming by the house regular.

I had convince her to give me a ride one day to work and then on top of that the next day I was on the base getting ready to walk home after work when I spotted her and she stop to give me a ride home. Then I convinced her to allow me to come over and spend some time with her.

Tekla and I started seeing each other on regular bases. I was really digging her she really was the idea chick for me because she knew how to handle me I did not like the weak ones she was a little aggressive just enough to turn me on. She was not a push over she was affectionate just what I liked about a women, I do not want to give all my secrets up but she knew what I needed.

Now Lisa also would enter into my life around the same time as Tekla, Lisa and I decided to meet finally we never seen each other yet, all we did was talk with each other on the phone.

Claudette was having a Bar-B-Q for Labor Day so I invited her over she needed the directions so I told Claudette to give her the directions. She told me that she was on her way.

Everyone is at the house the kids Claudette friends are there, Tek was not there yet we are not like a couple, we are just spending some time together at this point.

While I am just shooting the breeze with everyone, Eddie comes inside and tells me that this nice looking female is looking for me. Now Eddie was another one of my sister friends I think he was on the U.S. Carl Venison we use to hang out and go to the clubs as well.

He said he started to tell her that he was I, I asked him how did she look he said that she has hazel eyes and that she looks good and that she is driving a brand new car, color hot red.

The time had come it was time to reveal myself as well to see if I was her type and if she was my type. Once I got there she was still sitting in her car I notice that she had all this Jewelry on she had gold rings on every finger she had these gazelle glasses on, she was banging.

I took her hand and introduced myself and she did as well I found out that her name was Alisica they call her Lisa.

Upon meeting Alisica she was very sweet I introduced her to everyone I asked her if she wanted something to eat she did not, I don’t think she felt comfortable to be eating from people she just met and I was fine with that but she just didn’t know my sister can throw down in the kitchen.

She would ask me would like to take a ride with her. In addition, of course, I said yes. We drove to the sizzler steak house. We both order our meals, I had steak and shrimp, and I think Lisa had the same I did not have that much of an appetite, I remember Lisa finishing off my food, it was no shame on her behalf.

We decided to go Dutch, she paid for her food and I paid for mine she didn’t want me to pay her way, once we left the restaurant we went to the shopping mall I needed to purchase me a few things anyway.

I bought me a couple of pairs of jeans I found this nice shirt I paid ninety-five dollars for this shirt it was nice.

Lisa bought her a few things I asked her may I purchase it for her that’s just the kind of person I am she flat out told me know that she had her own money.

We get to the register and she pulls out all this money she had about twenty five hundred dollars on her. I pull out my knot to pay for mine, she was impress, I had just gotten paid she didn’t know it, that’s why I had that kind of money on me, I was starting from scratch all over again so I had to build back up.

What I liked about Alisica was that she was very independent she took care of herself although she was very high maintenance.

Once Lisa and I left the mall, she asked me if I had anything to do. I told her that I was free, so she took me to Oakland; I was a little nervous riding through Oakland with this Stanger even if she was a woman. Because it was a woman who had set me up to get, rob in New Orleans so I was shell shot I kept my hand on the door handle.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

If you recalled I told you the only kind of people that I use to be around was cutthroat conniving people.

Alisica seen that I was nervous and started laughing at me, and I asked her what was so funny, she told me that I had nothing to worry about she told me that she was harmless.

She made a statement saying I though New Orleans dudes suppose to be these hard core dudes that’s not scare of anything I told her that I’m not scare I just don’t want to get caught slipping again little did she know that I was already affiliated with the West Side Piru Bloods.

When we got to her house, she invited me in; she had a nice apartment, fully furnish with brand new furniture all through, it was a two-bedroom apartment, dining room, kitchen, brass, and glass all over the place.

Alisica would tell me up front that she had a daughter that was a year old, her name was Aisha, and that her baby father was not in her life or the Childs life. I told her that I did not have a problem with that, and I thanked her for telling me, I always meet women with kids for some reason I guess God knows that I can deal with kids.

She gave me a tour of her place she had a walk in closet that was full of clothes and shoes , I notice clothes with the price tags still on them, she had shoe boxes line up four high straight across the closet on both sides every last one had the latest shoes in them.

I’m tripping I asked her what she did for a living she told me she had been working every since she graduate high school she work for MetLife she was a computer data analysts, and she told me that she had a part time job at Housewives.

Housewives was this huge store that supplied your every needs it had all kind of stores inside it, they had produce and spices ,all kind of meats and household supplies.

Now Lisa knew the owner of this store for a long time they were Italian. They made their own sausages, and Lisa was a good worker everyone in that plaza use to call on her to work whenever she was free she would bring in anywhere from five hundred dollars a day working the registers, she did this for years.

We had a good talk that day we got to know each other, it was time for me to leave she would bring me home and when she drop me off, she kissed me and asked me to call her, I told her to call me as soon as she got home.

My mine was in over drive now I’m saying to myself, I have these two nice beautiful women with great potential, now if I go with Tekla I can travel all over the world with her, and I and her kids get alone, they liked me, I don’t have a problem with kids ,I love them all.

Now if I go the route with Alisica I can stay here in California where I always wanted to live.

Now Tekla would invite me to her house one Friday night after work. I can recall this night because it was special to me. Once I got off from work. I was walking off the base when Tekla pulls up and gives me a ride home. She asks me would I like to come over later on tonight that she would cook some steaks and we can watch a movie, I told her that that sounds great.

When I got to her place later on that night, the kids were all over me I had already known her kids from coming to the house playing with the kids.

After we ate, the kids went of to their rooms. We were sitting on the sofa relaxing she gave me the remote so we can watch television; she asked me what movie I wanted to watch, once I pick out the movie I put it in and then she offers me something to drink.

The drink was rum I didn’t like rum that much but I took it any way, rum and coke this was the first time that I had a drink in a long time at least hard liquor.

Once I got my drink Tekla came and set right under me then she move my hand and put her head on my lap and we watched television while I’m massaging her softly, she then grabs my hand and put it in her blouse for me to massage her breast.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

It was so sweet how the evening was going, this women knew all the right moves to get to me she was a couple of years older then I, and she just knew what she wanted and didn’t play around and that’s what I liked about her.

Before the movie was off we had both finish our drinks when she kissed me for the first time. She was an excellent kisser soft and wet and passionate, she got up off the sofa, grabbed my hand, and led me upstairs to her bedroom, then she told me that she would be right back; she went to check on the kids.

When she got back she, starts kissing me I started kissing her back and then we made love for the first time, and I must say I enjoyed it, we made great love to each other then we cuddle and talk for the rest of the night, she was my girl from then on and I was her man.

Now back to Alisica, I also was invited to her house we decided to go out, eat, and then take in a movie. After the movie we were headed to her place once we got there she wasted no time, she lead me to her bedroom and close the door and got undress right in front of me and then she got in the bed and told me what am I waiting on.

So I got undress and proceeded to follow suit, we made love for the first time, I really got to see Lisa and I must say this women had a shape like an hour glass she was so fine, and she also was an excellent kisser.

You know in life things always appears in twos, good and bad, the saying goes God will always send you good but the devil sends in an impersonator that will confuse you, he plays on your weakness.

I can recall one weekend Lisa would ask me if I had anything plan for the day. I told her that I did not, so she told me that she was coming to pick me up. Once I got in the car she told me to relax and enjoy the ride and do not ask any questions, I am curious now, but I chill and go along for the ride.

I am constantly reading the signs trying to get a since of direction where we are headed, we have been riding for hours, I started seeing signs that says Lake Tahoe.

Now the Tahoe Lake, in western United States is straddling the boundary between California and Nevada. It is situated in the Sierra Nevada in the midst of scenery of great beauty and grandeur, at an altitude of (6,225 ft). Tourist resorts and state recreation areas are on its shores.

Once we got there we spent a couple of hours, checking out the scenery, we had lunch a few drinks, then we were off to Reno, city in western Nevada and seat of Washoe County. The city is located on the Truckee River.

Near the Lake Tahoe, resort area of the Sierra Nevada Mountains. Reno is a busy resort with large gambling casinos. Its proximity to a region of magnificent scenery and outdoor recreation makes it popular with tourists.

Reno is also a residential community and a commercial, services; the Reno/Tahoe International Airport serves Reno.

Reno is home to the University of Nevada-Reno, once we got to Reno Lisa had already made reservations at the Eldorado casinos, we would go straight to our suite escorted by the bellhop.

Now the view was awesome this was my first time in Reno, Nevada. I loved it after we took care of business meaning settling in making love. We headed for the slot machines now Lisa is schooling me telling me to stay on the machine. Because if you keep feeding it money, and then you get off of it, someone else might get on it and then nine times out of ten they are going to hit, and I would have help them by putting all my money in the machine.

We really had a good time, they kept bringing us whatever kind of drink we wanted free, and as time went on, I would finally hit the jackpot.

The slot machine lights came on sirens sounded everyone was. Lisa was excited I had hit for eight hundred dollars, Lisa was telling me to quit. However, I had gotten greedy, and was trying to win more when I finally had enough I walked out of there with eighty dollars in my pocket. I had given the machine back all its money plus some.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

That was an amazing time we had, I couldn’t thank Lisa enough for that nice weekend she had given me, she took my mine off of Tekla, only for a minute, because deep down inside that’s who I wanted was Tekla.

Once we got back to Oakland, we went straight to Lisa apartment. Sunday afternoon she wanted to make love and we did. Once we were finish I told her that I had to go home because I had to go to work in the morning, she was upset she didn’t want me to leave she got mad now this was the first time I have seen her mad, this should have been a sign.

I finally convinced her why I should go home she would drop me off at home and I told her to call me when she got home.

The next day while at work I am at my workstation when all of a sudden everyone starts whistling and looking crazy, I turn around to see what is going on and its Lisa walking with Rose headed my way.

Now I am not mad or anything because she is, looking so good and she give me this big hug and kisses me in front of everyone. Moreover, I asked her what I owe to this surprise, she says I thought I would surprise you.

Then she tells me that she will wait for me in the parking lot. She then tells me to come home with her for dinner, and that I can spend the night with her. She tells me not to worry about a way to work in the morning because she would bring me are I could take her car. I was fine with that, even though Tekla and I were seeing each other it was nothing serious yet, she didn’t question me about anything whenever I see her, “I seen her”, that type of relationship it started out to be.

It was time to get off from work, and sure enough she was outside waiting on me, I greeted her with a kiss and we took off back to Oakland, I’m noticing that we had past our exit, and we are riding headed towards San Leandro, city, Alameda County, western California, on San Francisco Bay, near Oakland;

They have a large marina that we would visit quite often, this was a nice place to come and enjoy the scenery and look out at the Pacific Ocean, the largest and deepest of the world’s four oceans, covering more than a third of the earth’s surface and containing more than half of its free water.

Now to my surprise we were not headed for the marina as I thought we were. We were on East Fourteen Street and this street have a lot of car dealerships on it, as we were riding talking I notice this corvette it was clean, Lisa saw that I took notice in this car she asked me did I like it, I told her that it was alright.

She kept driving and talking then I seen this nice BMW and she asked me again you like that car and I said yes I can see me one day driving something like that, that’s when she turns around and pulls right into the car dealership.

She gets out the car and says to me come on; she asks me again do you like it? A 318-I BMW all white trimmed in black fully loaded sunroof top five speeds. I told her yes I like it, she calls a salesperson over and asks him how much one has to put down on a car like this to drive off the lot. Once he gave the price she went in her purse and asked him would he take a check, he said that he had to verify it and once he did, she told him it is for me to put it in my name.

Now I am tripping she said, don’t trip nigga you are going to pay your own car note and insurance I am just getting you started, I gave the salesperson my information he called my job to verify things, and luckily I knew the young lady at my job in the finance department.

She told him that I had been working there a long time and that I was making more money than I was, now the young lady at my job would tell me later, that I have to repay her by taking her for a ride in my car.

Once the process was over, I couldn’t believe this I didn’t see this coming at all I was on a cloud I’m saying to myself this is going to be my girl I got a good one.

She tells me to follow her to her apartment. Once we get there we go inside, she wants to make love again, so I give her what she wants, once we get through I am ready to go I got this new car I want to ride. Therefore, I tell her that I am going to go home for a little while and then she flips out. She says nigga you are not going anywhere you think you are going to just hit it, and leave when you want.
Therefore, she pulls the dresser in front of her bedroom door so I could not get out. Then she pulls this butcher knife out and tells me to try to leave.

I am wondering what in the world I have gotten myself into, she puts the knife away and says she was just playing and then she gives me a big forceful kiss and tells me that she wants me to move in with her.

Next thing we were in the bed making love again, and once we finish, I tell her that I am going to go home and pick up some of my things and that I would be back later.

She agreed on it and told me to call her when I get home, I really did not pay attention to the signs, now Lisa is a sweet woman, and she just loves hard.

Now guess what I go and do? I went straight over to Tekla’s house, now Tekla stayed in the same Navy housing complex as my sister did, a couple of blocks away.

I get to Tekla house and she greets me with open arms, every time that I would see the woman she turns me on, very attractive to me; I loved how she treated me.

She immediately sees the car that I’m in and I asked her how do she likes it, and then she asks for the keys I give her the keys and she takes it for a spin.

So I stay behind with the kids watching television, a little while later she returns and tells me that she bought some ice cream and that she put the bags in the trunk and now she can’t open the trunk and the ice cream is most likely going to make a mess.

I would try to open up the trunk but I could not get it open either, I told her not to worry about it that I would stop by the dealership when I get off from work the next day.

I stayed a few hours with Tekla and then I went home to show Claudette my new car, and then I left to go to my new place of residents.

Lisa had prepared a nice dinner for us we ate and watch television and then we both felt asleep.

The next day after work, I went straight to Lisa’s. I was not going to Claudette’s that much anymore, only this time I did because I had promise my nephew that I was going to buy him a bicycle. Therefore, I picked up my nephews and my niece and we went to the bicycle store, and I told him to pick out what he wanted.

Lewanye picked out a nice mountain bike that cost almost three hundred dollars, now once we purchased the bike he was so excited and I must say I was to for that matter we were all excited.

Lewanye told us that he wanted to ride his bike home so I allowed him the opportunity to ride it home I drove slowly so I could keep an eye on him.

After that, I left to go home, now Lisa always waited for me when I got off from work she would be sitting in the living room all doll up waiting there for me every day dress to kill.

She would greet me with a big kiss. She would have my bath ready and food for me to eat and then she would expect me to take her riding. She love to ride and I did to we would go in the mountains almost every day we would make love in the mountains; we would go on this secluded trail and make love we were very spontaneously.

On this day, I had told her that I needed to stop at the dealership because I could not get the trunk open, once we got there the sales representative who sold me the car came out to assist us, and I told him the problem.

He told me how can you drive a BMW and do not know how to work it, he asked for the keys and then he would show me how to open the trunk, nothing was wrong with it, I just did not know what I was doing.

BMW’s are special the hoods open different and the trunks, and then I had a five speed and when you shift this car in reverse you had to double clutch it, these are all the things I had to learn and he also had to show me how to work my alarm system that came with it.

After the salesperson open the trunk I retrieved the bag and through the ice cream away it was in a bag by itself, no damage done Lisa never seen a thing.

On another occasion I should have seen the signs I was chilling with Lisa we had gotten finish love making when I told her that I was going out for a while, and that’s when she flipped out again telling me that I couldn’t go anywhere that she wanted me to stay home with her.
Michael's Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

I put my clothes on grabbed my keys and headed for the door, once I got out side I headed to the Bimmer, and I was pulling out of the parking area when Lisa jumps on the hood out of know where she appeared screaming, telling me you not going anywhere.

The neighbors started looking out of their windows, so I stop the car and she jumps off the car, and I asked her what was her problem, she tells me that she is sorry and that she just didn’t want to be alone.

She convince me to stay home that night, but before we got back in the house she wanted to go to the store she said that we needed some bread, and she told me she wanted to drive so I gave her the keys and we proceeded to the grocery store.

Now I did not know what store we were going to all I knew that we were on the freeway, now this freeway was above ground and Lisa is doing about ninety miles an hour she starts tripping, she is telling me so you wanted leave me uh.

I mean she’s yelling and crying you going to leave uh, uh, I’m telling her baby no I’m not going anywhere we are heading towards this divider full speed ahead she’s threaten to kill both of us. I tell her that I love her that I am sorry and she turns the wheel just in time to prevent us from hitting this divider head on. We would have been killed on impact.

I am nervous as hell and mad. I played along like everything was fine, she finally pulls in the convince store, soon as she stops the car I grab the keys out the ignition and get out the car and run to her side of the car and that’s when I put my hands on another women, something I said I would never every do again.

Did you notice the same way I jumped out the car on Yolande I did with Alisica.

However, this woman was playing with my life she started crying everyone was looking in the store, once I notice this I got myself together, and we headed back home where we would make up and make crazy dangerous love.

She was crazy in love with me and it happen so fast I did not see it coming, fatal attraction.

I can also remember this one time Alisica and I was sitting at home watching television smoking on a joint I had just gotten in from work I had dropped off one of my co-workers I was dating on the side.

Beautiful young women the day before we went to the movies to see how Harry met Sally, well on this particular day I had to bring her home, the year was 1989 the world series was getting ready to come on.

I am at home chilling when out of nowhere the floor starts to buckle sirens are going off things are falling off the walls glass is breaking out of all the windows. We are looking at the television when breaking news comes on and I am looking at the bridge I had just crossed I am looking at cars falling in the bay.

It was an earthquake I am tripping I had never experience anything like this Lisa is trying to calm me down; Lisa was telling me where to stand I m like stand. Girl I am trying to get the hell out of here.

After everything settle down we went out to explore only to see all the damage that had occur I went straight to Alameda to check on my family.

That is when it hit me, that could have been me. I was on that bridge. I am telling you, I had just gotten off that bridge. Many people died that day.

I going to share this story with you on how good God is, Alisica would have a bad experience, that she would almost lose her life.

Alisica had gone to her company’s Christmas party you remember that I told you that she worked for MetLife. Well while she was there, her supervisor tried to hit on her and she was not having it.

So she walked away to go to the bathroom and she left her drink at the table, and once she got back to retrieved her drink, later on that night she started feeling sick.

She was rush to the hospital, the doctor told her that she had to have her stomach pump that someone had spiked her drink, while pumping her stomach her lungs collapse, and then she went into a coma.

Alisica would stay in a coma for three months, I am going to tell you some of the story this is a hard piece of time for me to go through again.

While Lisa was in a coma, there was nothing I could do so I would go to work and then I would try to sneak in the hospital to see her.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

The reason I had to sneak in because Lisa mother could not stand me. We were fussing all the time you see before I met Lisa she was taking care of her family and when I came in her life she started spending more time with me and her mother did not like the fact that I was the reason why.

I can recall on one particular day I was at Lisa’s apartment chilling watching television, now I am paying half of the bills now with Lisa. I am chilling when the phone rings, its Lisa mother she answers with whom is this answering my daughters phone.

I tell her this is Michael now she knows me from Lisa telling her that I am a part of her life now. Nevertheless, Lisa mother was not willing to accept it, not yet any way.

Lisa mother started yelling at me telling me that I need to get out of her daughters house I’m telling her that I pay rent here to, she tells me that she didn’t care, that she was about to put on her boots and coming over there to kick my ass.

I told her that I would be waiting on her when she gets there. Then she hung up the phone. The minute she got off the phone, I was grabbing my things and getting the hell out of there.

It was time to go back to Claudette’s for a while; this was also doing the time when I join another automobile club BMW club one of my coworkers belong to this club and he got me involve his name is Lee and he was also from Louisiana, he had a red 325i.

We would, hook up after work a few blocks West in Preservation Park, a neighborhood of restored Victorian residences; to the east are Lake Merritt and its surrounding Lakeside Park.

Now Near the southwest shore of Lake Merritt we would hook up with the rest of the guys and ride, this was also doing the time I was hanging with Claudette’s friends Corney and Eddie and Shonda.

Now Shonda and I was good friends, her boy friend was Corney now Corney was dating this girl on the side name Carla, now Carla was a regular dancer on Soul Train.

She was a beautiful young woman, she was crazy for Corney, now Shonda and I use to ride all the time we would go to the clubs together and just hang out at the beach our relationship was strictly platonic.

She would eventually have an affair with my friend Lee the one with the red BMW. And she would introduce me to one of her girl friends name Tracey, now Tracey was a light skinned hairy, six foot tall beautiful women, she was married or living with a man and she had two children.

Now Tracey lived in Concord (California), city in Contra Costa County, in the Diablo Valley, near San Francisco.

Now Shonda and Corney also lived in Concord as well they drove to Alameda every day. Upon I meeting Tracey she was straight up with me telling me about her situation, she would tell me that she needed help financially, she told me her main concern was to be able to get her kids something for Christmas.

She told me that her man was not working and that she was having a hard time, for some reason or another when people knew you were working at the Navy Base in my field they would go out their way to make friends with you.

Now that Tracey and I were getting familiar with each other we started hanging out more I would use Corney and Shonda apartment quite often with Tracey.

Then Shonda and I would go off and meet my friend Lee we would sometimes take Tracey and Shonda to South Park now this is a very large park in the heart of the city of Sacramento.

Sacramento has more than 120 parks. The most popular is William Land Park, site of the Sacramento Zoo. Just outside town is the American River Parkway, a county park that offers riverside trails for bicycling, walking, and jogging, and many opportunities for fishing and rafting.

Our BMW club would travel on some weekends with our women. This is where Tracey and I would really have good times she could never keep her hands off me. Tracey and I could be riding and she would see a nice spot and she would give me a look and tell me to pull over there, let us go here, she would want to make love in some of the strangest places, which I did not mine.

I can recall on this Thanksgiving Day I had Tracey with me we were all at Claudette’s, now this was Claudette first time meeting Tracey, this women asked me where was the bathroom I pointed towards the door and she grabs my hand and lead me in the bathroom with her.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Then she starts kissing all over me and telling me she wants to make love, I quickly told her that we could not do this here in my sister’s house and the kids or here as well, this blew me away I hurried up and open the door hoping know one seen us.

All of this was happening while Lisa was in the hospital. Lisa mother would not let me get close to her.

Lisa sister would get in touch with me and tell me that they are thinking about pulling the plug on her, at least her mother was thinking about the idea. If she did not come out of the coma soon.

If you notice, I am beginning with the same pattern that I was doing in New Orleans with all of these women, the life style with fast women, money, and cars, only this time without the drugs.

Shonda introduce me to another young lady her name was Rhonda, she live in Walnut Creek residential city, Contra Costa County, western California, near Oakland; The community, named for its many walnut trees,

This young lady was also nice looking she was thick beautiful skin she’s about five, five, how I came to meet her was one night Lee and I were hanging out at this club downtown Oakland on Broadway, at the Renaissance Hotel.

Once we got there we notice that it’s a nice intimate club we go to the bar an order a drink, when all of a sudden Shonda walks up with Rhonda, who I didn’t know at the time, she introduces us and then here comes Digital Underground.

They go straight to the stage and perform their hit. humpy hump, now I am chilling at the bar standing up drinking my drink bopping my head to the music, when hump calls me to the stage, I’m looking around to see who he was talking to and it turn out that he was talking to me because when they started playing their record I started doing the hump.

Therefore, he wanted me to dance with them, which I did, and I must say everyone enjoyed it afterwards, everyone applauded and I felted well, after their set they came over to our table and this is when I would meet, Tupac Shakur, before he was famous.

We all had a good time that night Rhonda knew Shock G, and that’s why they came over to our table, once the night was over we decided to go and have some breakfast.

It was Lee, Shonda, Rhonda, and I Digital Underground had left the building, once we got outside I asked Rhonda did she know how to drive and she told me yes, and that’s when I gave her my car keys and then she asked me what kind of car am I driving.

I pointed at my car that was sitting under the lights looking good, now Lee was looking at me like why are you giving her your keys, then he followed my lead and gave Shonda his keys as well.

They were so happy I kicked back turned on some music and told her to take me to get something to eat once we arrived the restaurant was close, so Rhonda said she would fix us something to eat if we go to her house and she needed a ride home anyway.

Once we got to Walnut Creek we went to her apartment now it is around two thirty in the morning and we both have to be at work in the morning.

The girl had a nice place she stayed by herself in a two bedroom apartment, after she finish cooking bacon and eggs and toast she pulled out a shoe box full of weed, this was my first time smoking in about a year.

Lee and Shonda would go off in one of the bedrooms, and then Rhonda would tell me that she is going to bed and ask me do I want to come with her.

She took my hand and led me to her bedroom where we both snuggle up and felt to sleep, without any sex.

I woke up about five-o-clock that morning and told Lee that we have to go, we washed up the best of our ability then we kiss the girls and left, now Shonda was off so she stayed there, and we told them we would be back after work, we would take one car.

We decided to take his car, we called in at the job to tell them that we might be a little late, we got about three blocks away when Lee forgot to leave the pistol behind because we didn’t want to take a chance on the MP’s, finding it at the gate of the Navy Base.
Now after work I pick up a change of clothes, and Lee would also, and we headed back to Walnut Creek, now once we got there we were to help Shonda move, she was putting her furniture in storage.

I did not ask any question, I just agreed to help; I would stumble across a photo album while helping, Rhonda would stop to show us her pictures.

She shows us pictures with her and Easy-E, and she had pictures with Ice-T, all taken at this apartment, she had a picture with her and Too Short as well.

She told me that she was friends with them; I came to find out later that she was a major groupie; she was on her way to Los Angeles.

To the reader you can see I have picked up the same habits that I had before, (women).

It’s been about two and a half months now and Lisa is showing no signs of progress, don’t think for one minute that I am not feeling bad because of Lisa condition, there’s just nothing I could do my hands were tied.

When I was not spending any time in the street with Tracey and Shonda I would spend time with Tekla, I decided to do something nice for Tekla and the kids.

I decided to take them all to Disney Land; I would pay for the whole trip, a trip for five, we decided to drive we would drive Tekla’s car.

She and the kids were so excited when I told them the news we just had to pick a time when everyone could have some time off.

Now I knew the area because I had an Aunt who lived in West Hollywood. My father and I use to go out there every summer, and my father company that he works for have an office in Los Angeles.

Therefore, I knew my way around; I have been traveling all my life.

In addition, my father and I have been traveling through at least forty-eight of the states.

Once we got all of our schedules figure out we had agreed to leave on a Thursday night, I always like to travel at night there is not a lot of traffic on the freeways that time of night.

Before we left I decided to rent a place for us to stay, I started to stay on the Disney Land Resort at their hotel on the lot, but I decided that I will splurge a little, I made reservations at the Marriott Hotel, I would purchase two rooms, two doubles.

Now I like purchasing doubles because I did not like sleeping all night on the bed once we make a mess of it, that way we could just switch beds.

It was time to leave I made sure everyone had extra clothes, and that the kids had something to keep them occupy doing the ride to Anaheim, city in southwestern California, located in Orange County, in the southeast section of the metropolitan region centered on Los Angeles. It is a convention and tourist center, where Disney land is located.

The drive would take me about eight hours and a half; we got there early Friday morning, on the way there the police stop me and gave me a ticket for making an illegal turn, I did not get upset I took the ticket and told the officer to have a nice day.

We located the Marriott Hotel; once we got there, the valet helped us out the car with our bags and then took the car and gave me a ticket after welcoming us to the Marriott.

Once we got to the reservation desk and checked in everything went smooth. The bellhop would show us to our rooms gave us a quick tour, I gave him a tip and then he was on his way.

We got the kids settled in there room and then we went to our rooms and had the kids come to our room and we explained what we expected of them on this trip.

I order room services for everyone and then we decided to get some rest and then we were going to take Disney Land by storm.

The night was beautiful this women treated me so well and the love making was simple marvelous, we decided to go to Disneyland amusement park Saturday morning, and spend the whole day there.

We ordered room services again for everyone. We set around watch television, made love again, and again. Once the kids got situated we went to the lounge for a few drinks, once we got back we check on the
kids and then we were back to love making. I just could not get enough of her and I guess she felt the same way. On the other hand, was I being set up for the trap?

Later that night I told Tekla that, I would be back that I had to make a run. Since I was out this way I decided to run to Griffith Park to see some of my people but on my way there I decided not to go I had gotten a funny feeling so I turned around went picked up some money from western union and headed back to my baby.

The next day we had a blast at the park, now I only would get on the log ride and take a ride on a boat through the safari and I would experience the Epcot center, Space Mountain.

I was just watching all of them enjoying themselves we all had a great time, I'm quite sure that's one that they want forget.

Once we got back to Alameda it was time for business again back to work, my relationships with Tekla was getting serious, I was really digging her and her kids.

I had stop seeing Tracey, my boy Lee tried to hit on her I heard through the great vine. Now you know how I felt about Shonda she was like my sister I would later tell her that I do not think that Lee is going to leave his wife for her, so I told her that she needs to slow her role.

Don't you know that she went back and told Lee that I had told her that he was married and that he would never leave his wife for her?

Therefore, now Lee gets mad at he and me wants to fight he told me to meet him in the parking lot after work he wanted to fight, I just let that go and went on about my business.

We would never ride together again; I tried to explain to him what Shonda meant to me, he just didn’t understand, now some kind of way Corney finds out that something is wrong with Shonda.

He finds out that she was cheating on him with one of my partners and he thought that I was his partner; we did not let that get between our relationships, he understood that the blame was not on me but her and besides he was cheating as well with Carla the soul train dancer.

Shonda and I had made up I told her why I told her, it was because I didn’t want her to get hurt, thinking that this dude was going to be there for her I knew he just wanted her body.

That is all we were into slaying everything that comes our way, I eventually hit on Shonda myself, she was shock that I did, I am thinking shit you giving it to everybody else, and at least I'm going to be there for you.

She told Claudette what I had done and when Claudette confronted me, I did not commit to being honest, I told Claudette that she was lying, we continue being friends and hanging out we just knew where we stand platonic.

There was this one beautiful Saturday morning and Shonda was at the house, Shonda and I always hung out, they were at the house all the time.

We decided to go to the beach now we stay right by the beach in Alameda, the Bay was practically in our backyard, we got to the beach I am cruising, sunroof back windows down Shonda looking good as always-nice thick high yellow beautiful young woman.

She has her feet on the dash with her toes freshly pedicure jamming to the music starring out at the Pacific Ocean, when all of a sudden Shonda says hold up Michael, go back! Go back! I asked her what is up she jumps out the car by time I get there Shonda is beating this beautiful young woman to death. Eddie and I get in between them and break them up; we get back to the car and go straight to Claudette’s.

By the time we get to Claudette’s the police had call the house and told us to report to the station and if we did not show within thirty minutes that he would issue a warrant out for our arrest.

So we all decided to get in the car and go and see what the deal was, all we had to do was give our side of the story and write a statement.

They let Shonda off the hook. It was both of their words against each other. No one came forward as a witness, once we got back to Claudette’s, we gave her the run down, then the phone rings and its Carla’s man calling. I don’t know how he got our number, but he had it he asked to speak to Corney.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

He would threaten Corney he told him that his girl had to be paid, that his girl was his money, she was paid for her looks and Shonda had scar her pretty bad in the face, he told Corney when he finds him that he was dead.

I am just paying attention because if dude had brought that mess over to Claudette’s house he would have been dealt with.

I was hanging with some crazy military folks that would go to back for Claudette or anyone of us. That is the unique thing about military unity they all stick together.

Alisica would come out her coma exactly three months; she would have to learn how to walk again, now Lisa would ask for me right away, and she would not take no for an answer, she wanted me there.

After Yolanda, Lisa baby sister got in touch with me. And gave me the news she told me to come by and pick her up so we can go to the hospital, once we got there Lisa started crying she had all these tubes on her and she had these two big holes in her chest where the tubes where running.

Lisa stayed in the hospital about another two weeks and then she would live with her mother until she gotten well, she told me to go back and stay at her house, which I did, and her mother told me that I could come to her house and visit her daughter when I wanted to.

Her mother was finally coming around, I started spending a lot of time with Lisa family, her brother and I got to be good friends, and I started meeting more and more of her relatives and we all got alone just fine.

As time went on Lisa was getting her energy and her appetite back, and gaining weight again, but I notice that she was not the same, she had lost a little something; the job where she worked MetLife would give her a lifetime disability check and retire her.

She was awarded the maximum payment, once Lisa got well she came back home and she started working again for Housewives, she was freelancing, and getting her checks twice a month.

Now the person who had spiked her drink came forwarded and admitted what he had done, and took his punishment like a man.

I decided to go out on a limb and propose to someone. I really did not know who I wanted to be with it. It was the same way with May-May and Yolande.

After work I decided to go to the Hill Top mall in Richmond (California), city, Contra Costa County, western California, a deepwater port on San Francisco Bay, Richmond is linked by bridge with San Rafael in Marin County.

Once I got to the mall I went straight to the jewelry store, and I already knew what kind of ring I wanted I have purchased enough of rings to know what I like on my women.

This one would be a marquise shape diamond engagement ring, with the wedding band, I would spend thirty five hundred on the ring, the jewelers happen to be there this day so I asked them could they size it up for me.

I got Lisa size ring finger that was a seven. Tekla’s as well was a seven. I am confuse I do not know what to do. I love both of these women. I was really digging Tekla because she had more to offer me as I stated early she was in the Navy, I am a military man also, and I love to travel. Besides the woman just treated me good. Moreover, she had good benefits.

Now with Alisica I did not know was it love, or I just felted as if I owed her, it was like a sympathy thing, I felt sorry for her but I knew she was a sweet girl she just wanted to be love with no games.

Therefore, I would whine up proposing to Tekla first. I went straight over to her house, if I recall she was in the kitchen cooking or washing dishes or both, when I asked her to marry me. I placed the ring on her finger, she was so thrill she immediately told me yes that she would marry me and we hug, and she kissed me with passion.

Then she went straight to the telephone, she called her family in Chicago and told them the news. I talk with them for a few minutes and told them that we would see each other soon.

The next day I went home to Claudette’s house soon as I walked in the door she asked me what I was doing she said you know what I am talking about; you gave Tekla a ring, you told her to marry you.
I told her I know what I am doing she asked me about Lisa I told her I’m just letting Tekla where it for a while,
Candice goes straight to the phone, calls Tekla, and tells her that I love my baby brother you had better tell him everything that is going on with you, so she told me to go and talk with her and I did.
And I appreciated her honesty about everything, when I got back home Claudette asked me did she tell me and I told her yes and then my sister told me to be careful and that she loves me.
Now Tekla and I had plan on me meeting her family, she was taking leave for a while, and she was going home for two weeks to Chicago. I was going to catch a flight and meet her there she gave me the keys to her house. I would take her and the kids to the airport kiss her bye and tell her that I would see her soon.
Now that she is gone my stubbs ass brings Lisa and her cousin Melissa to her house I had to take care of something, and I would be there all hours of the night.
Tekla would call me every night to make sure I was there, one night Tekla’s sister called me and I would never forget what she would tell me she told me she said Michael I know Tekla is my sister but why in the world do you want to marry her you need to thank about this real hard.
I am tripping why her sister would tell me something like that she should want her to be happy.
I considered it; I never met Tekla in Chicago what would be the shocker when Tekla came back from her vacation. She had someone with her, she had a man with her I here this was one of her ex-boyfriends her sister had already gave me the scoop on everything and I never told Tekla to this day that her sister was the reason.
Are her sisters was part of the reason, it was no excuse to flaunt another nigga in my face regardless, when I got to her house to retrieve my things and of course my ring I pull in back of her car.
I did not know that this dude was in her car trying to get out of the driveway in her car I was at Tekla’s door asking her for my ring and this dude telling me to let him get out and I told him to chill, that soon as I get my ring I would gladly move my car.
Now out of the blue Tekla says all right yawl don’t fight I’m looking at her crazy like it’s not that serious, what would make you say something like that.
That would be the end of our relationship, I then go and put the ring on Lisa finger, but I did not ask her to marry me I told her that this was a promise to her that I will someday marry her.
Lisa and I would start hanging out constantly it was Aisha, Lisa, and me now Lisa mother would keep Aisha the majority of time, so Lisa and I would take drives all over the state we would go to half moon bay and we also would go to Napa valley we would ride to silicon valley.
We were doing well, now I started hanging with Rico now Rico had this apartment on Broadway and Macarthur, right across the street from MacArthur Park. He stayed on the seventh floor it was a nice view over looking part of the city.
On this evening, I and another one of our friends were at his apartment in the same complex on the balcony overlooking the swimming pool. I spotted this beautiful young woman lounging on a lounge chair by the pool by herself we watched her for a while, and then that is when I made my move, I just had too I am a sucker for a beautiful woman.
I took the elevator to the ground floor and I walked to the recreation area where the pool was she was still there by herself, I politely extended my hand and introduced myself and she told me her name was Meka.
Now this young woman was wearing a two-piece pink bikini she was Vietnamese, now this was the finest Vietnamese women I have ever seen.
She was polishing her toenails when I offer to polish them for her, she asked me do I know how and of course I would say yes I use to polish Yolande toes all the time and I was good at it.
While I’m polishing her nails I asked her out, I offered to take her out to dinner, she had a sexy accent we would get together a couple of more times and then we would just fade away.
I really did not have that much time any more my time was with Lisa. We were always with her family, we were just enjoying Lisa, now that she has gain her strength back, and now that she is healthy once again.
we would visit universals studios, we would go to the University of San José where Lisa sister was going to school.

I took Lisa to Redwood City, to see Stephanie Mills, now Redwood City, city, seat of San Mateo County, western California, a deepwater port on western San Francisco Bay, at the mouth of Redwood Creek is close to Redwood National Park, national park, located in northwestern California.

The world’s tallest trees (367 ft) are located there. The park encompasses a 40-mile strip of scenic Pacific coastal territory and contains virgin forests of ancient redwood trees.

The concert that we would attend would be an intimate show, dinner and concert, after dinner you were escorted to the area where the concert would be held, now Lisa knew that I was in love with Stephanie Mills; I purchased a white silk rose for her with Lisa permission of course I would give it to her.

Once the concert started we settle in, we had great seats and it was a revolving stage, prior to the show I had told Lisa that I was going to give Stephanie the rose Lisa really didn’t believe me, I would finally get my chance to meet her.

She was getting ready to sing her hit song "When I think of home, I”.

And that’s when I went to the stage without any interference and she seen me coming and she bent down to receive my rose and she shook my hand and told me thanks and that’s when I kissed her hand and told her that I love her she gave me an awesome smile that made me weak in the knees.

Lisa and I would spend a great deal of time in Berkeley, Berkeley, city in Alameda County, western California, on the northeastern shore of San Francisco Bay.

The city is a leading educational center, seat of the University of California at Berkeley I would attend several football and basketball games there.

We would take in movies and go to dinner and just hang out the great thing with Lisa was that she was born and raised in California and she knew the history of Cali and she would take me all over the state, from the top to the bottom.

We would spend summers with the kids at the boardwalk in Santa Cruz, Santa Cruz (California), city in western California, seat of Santa Cruz County, on Monterey Bay. It is a tourist center.

Every now and then, I would find time to hang out with Rico, we would still go to Fort Ore and hang out at the Base, and we would hang out in Palo Alto, at Stanford University, beautiful women all over the place.

As time went on Lisa and I would start raising a family we would finally start living out our dream, I would eventually after seven years and two more kids I would finally ask Lisa to marry me.

Around this time my mother in-law and I had become fond of each other, but Lisa was also being pressured from her family about why she has not gotten married yet?

So by Lisa being pressured she started pressuring me that only made me prolong it more. By now Lisa and I have been through it all we have had all of our ups and downs, now Lisa and I would live in New Jersey for awhile and also in New Orleans for while, and we would move back to California.

I decided to move the family to New Jersey with my father. This was like home to me as well. Before we moved I made a mistake and told someone that I was moving and that’s when one night while we were asleep someone enter into our apartment and put a gun to my head and made me get out of the bed and they told me that they had their hands on the trigger not to make a sound.

It was some of my associates who I was a filleted with from the Blood Gang, who was also filleted with the 69 village Gang, and Funk Town Peru’s, they were told that I was leaving town, because as you might not have know, I was known as the money man.

I was keeping the safe and the drugs at my spot. I was in charge of running the safe house. One of the lieutenants and I were friends and that is how I was caught up with them. I would give them sometimes my paycheck and every two weeks they would double my money and I would keep their weapons as well.

I told them that I was not going anywhere, I told them I was just thinking about moving, they told me blood in blood out and went out the door, that was a scary situation I had got caught slipping again something I told myself that I would never get caught slipping after what had happen in new Orleans. So the
next day I called a local moving and storage company to put everything in storage and I got us a motel on the other side of town until I made contact and reservations to head east.

I called my father to tell him that my family and I would be coming his way, and he was ecstatic about the news he always wanted me in his company, and I must say he was always there for me and he would finally get to meet his grand kids.

• • • • •

while living in New Jersey, one day Lisa and I was out, I thank we were house hunting, and the kids were with my father and his girl friend, when we got back home my father had cut my kids hair, I went off I got so mad at my father.

Michael and David had a lot of hair on their head and we were not ready for their hair to be cut, Lisa use to style their hair in nice braids.

My father was still treating me like I was a child and you know every boy eventually think that he is grown and thanks he’s ready to challenge his father.

Well this day was the day I told my father how I felted and I was using profanity while fussing at him, when he reach to grab me upon him grabbing me I fought him back. For the first time I told him that I am not know little boy anymore, I am a man, his girl friend and Lisa would break us up.

I felt so bad after that, we both gave apologies to each other, after that incident, my father would ask me first if it was all right to do this are that for the kids.

Now my father was ready to help Lisa and me to purchase a place to stay in New Jersey. Lisa helped me study to get my CDL’s. In addition, I started working with my father for a while, my father had this big house, upstairs three stories high, my family, and I lived in the addict it was turn into a nice apartment.

It took Lisa some time to adjust, she never really could adjust so she decided to go back home.

I told her that I understood and that to go home for a little while, so she decided to go home for two weeks, I kept the kids with me.

This was doing the time I would spend time at my father’s club and one of his workers her name was Peaches nice looking young lady she would come by and braid the kid’s hair and she would take us out to Manhattan to go shopping we started having an affair.

Then it was Rose and then there was Star, these were all the women I started messing with when my fiancé left to go back home. I also started messing with some of my old friends like Cool V, now Cool V, is Biz Markie’s father, the rapper. We also was helping with some of my stepbrothers friends, being a look out for them they were squatters in these apartment buildings selling drugs they would give us two hundred dollars a night for doing this for a couple of hours.

We all use to hang out together we use to pass out fliers for Biz when he had local shows in the area, sometimes we would go to the basement where Big Daddy Kane, and some of flavor unit and more of the famous rappers of today hung out.

Lisa would come back to join me in New Jersey with the kids only after I had went to the court house an got full custody of our kids, I told the judge that it was just me and I didn’t know where the mother was.

I was awarded full custody and now I would receive general assistance, and I was also getting food stamps New Jersey laws were giving money away like crazy, now I know I didn’t have to do this because my father gave me everything I needed, plus I was working with him and sometimes with one of his friends

I would use all the food stamps to purchase the groceries for the house, I had two tests coming up that I was studying for one was with general motors and then there was the post office.

I went out one night to the club, when I came back home around three in the morning Lisa wanted me to make love to her and I told her not tonight and then she got upset and she ripped all my clothes.

The wardrobe that we just bought in Manhattan, she got the scissors and just went crazy on them and the things she could not tear she found some glue and put glue over everything.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

You see I would have loved to love Lisa up that night, but I was with Rose and we had just gotten
finish from having wild drunken crazy sex.

That morning when I got up, I went down stairs and that is when my father’s girl friend Bernice had a
nice talk with me. She asked me was I beating on Lisa. In addition, I told her no I told her that she was
beating me. Carmen was coming back on me from how I was treating everyone else. I was the one getting
abuse now.

I was simply a man whore with no morals. Lisa and I decided to go back to California at least Lisa
decided for us. So I told my father that I was leavening, I told him to put all of the kids toy and bicycles in
the storage room, and that I would be leaving soon.

We decided to take Amtrak; we took Amtrak all the way to New Orleans, I spent a little time in New
Orleans, once again, I guess I was moving to slow. Lisa decided to leave without me again she went back to
California without me.

She flew out of New Orleans into San Francisco; I stayed in New Orleans about six months with the
kids before I would eventually go back home to California, Lisa was giving me an ultimatum she was telling
me if I wanted her I would have to live in California.

She did not want to live anywhere else, now around this time I would meet this fine ass beautiful young
woman, who lived in the neighborhood over from where my mother lived, it was called Washington Place.

Her name was Donna, this women reminded me of Yolande I guess, but I’m telling you she was fine
ass all out doors it did not take me long to fall for her.

I spent a lot of time and money with her we would travel a lot all over the east coast we even went back
to New Jersey together because I started trafficking again for my cousin.

Every time I go to New Orleans, I would whine up getting involved in things I know I should not.
Donna and I was the talk of the neighborhood I use to dress this woman up, have her getting her nails and
hair done every week.

Her family was in love with me, my appetite also started getting bigger for sex, Donna had some nice
friends, and they were digging me as well. I would take advantage of this quite often, now I stated before I
don’t know if it was the dope the money or the cars are was it a little of everything but I didn’t want for
anything any women I pretty much wanted I got.

I persuaded Donna for us to do a little experimenting with some of her friends I told her that I would
pay her and I would allow her to run the show.

Donna would tell me how much money and dope she wanted and then I would request some of her
friends, it might be, Donna and I, and two are three or more women at one time getting our freak on.

She also had this Caucasian female friend name cookie that was one of the thickest white women I
have ever seen she would also come to live with me for a while it was us three, me, Donna and cookie until
they started getting jealous of one another.

I was so stupid I had my kids with me often; hell, my youngest was calling Donna his mother.

Donna and I would be crazy about each other we would have so many physical fights between each
together that they were scary. I refuse to talk about that error in time.

My father would get in touch with me and tell me that federal express called for me and that they
wanted me to come and work for them.

Now I know by me taking the job I would lose my so call family, little did I know I had left them a
long time ago if I were ever there anyway.

All my life had consisted of fast women, fast money, and cars, while all of this was going on, I had
once again decided to give this entire lifestyle up and return to Lisa, and give up the opportunity to work for
federal express.

Because I knew that, I had someone who really loved me besides she gave me three beautiful kids, and
all she wanted was I and nothing else.
Lisa and I would make arrangements for me to fly in from New Orleans to Oakland international, and the kids arrived at night around eight thirty, Lisa was there to greet us with open arms, she had purchased a new apartment for us fully furnished it was on twelve and fourteen street.

It was a nice apartment right by Lake Merritt they had a public library around the corner. It was walking distance to downtown Oakland. We were also on the Bart line now Bart is the Bay area rapid transit.

Lisa would also help me land a job. I took a job at the Kaiser center in Oakland across from the lake. I started working security also. Working from eleven to seven in the morning, now Lisa was also working, she was working in San Francisco for a security firm. She was a supervisor; she was also going to school for her master degree.

We were doing good Lisa was getting her checks and working at Housewives on the side and plus my check and my hustle, yes I was still hustling.

I decided it was time to use my military benefits to purchase us a house, but not until we have gotten married, for the first time I felt good about myself, everything was going great we would take the kids to toys r us, every payday and allow them to purchase one thing no matter what it was.

This went on every payday; I would buy the remote control cars, boats, bicycles, we would buy all the dolls and all of girl things for Aisha, we would go out to eat quite often.

I later would meet one of my neighbors at a restaurant in San Francisco, it was Darrel sisters, you remember Darrel he and I had a fight back in high school? Well his sisters and another one of my friends I grew up with had move out to the area.

Now, who would have though, three thousand miles away from home I would meet someone from my neighborhood, in a restaurant, all the way out here in California.

I also took on a hobby, tropical fish. I purchased two aquariums; one was a two hundred gallon tank I had two Jack Dempsey’s and I had two Red Devils, and one Catfish and a Bottom Feeder.

My smaller tank that was a seventy-five gallon tank, I kept Guppies that I would feed my bigger fish I had the tanks decorated nice whenever someone would come over they would notice the aquariums.

Lisa started taking me also to the bookstores this is where I would get my passion, reading novels; we would also spend time in the library with the kids.

I couldn’t asked for more, life was great every chance that I and Lisa had we were doing exciting things together, one day I woke up and told Lisa that I was ready.

She asked me what am I ready for, and I told her that I am ready to marry her, she was so excited, we decided not to wait time, and that we would keep it between us.

We decided that we would go to Las Vegas to get married soon as we were able to take some time off from work, and we also decided to let Michael and David be our best men and to allow Aisha to be Lisa’s matron of honor, (brides’ maid).

After we would get back from Vegas, we would have a reception with the family.

We decided that we would rent a car and spend the week in Vegas; the date Lisa wanted to get married was Valentine’s Day, of all days she picked this one.

I agreed I called my mother and told her my plans she was happy for me, we would wait until we get back to let Lisa parents know that we had elope.

The week of Valentine’s Day, we headed to Las Vegas The downtown area of Las Vegas, known as Glitter Gulch, is characterized by long-established casinos.

It is the site of the Fremont Street Experience, a renovation project, designed to revitalize the downtown area and attract more people to the street’s casinos. Covering a five-block stretch of Fremont Street, this section is a covered pedestrian mall where thousands of lights play out animated scenes overhead.

In addition to the casinos and attractions downtown, more are located on The Strip, a 4-mile neon-lined portion of Las Vegas Boulevard, located slightly south of downtown.
Michael Brown

Michael’s Life Time Memories

Some of the extravagant casinos on The Strip play on epic Hollywood themes, such as the Treasure Island Casino, while others advertise attractions, such as Egyptian pyramids, and medieval castle, or some erupting volcano’s.

Ever-grander casinos open each year, attracting patrons with such draws as replicas of New York City landmarks or roller coasters atop tall towers. Outside the city lies Hoover Dam, a massive concrete dam that was completed in 1936 as part of federally funded water works project.

Las Vegas bills itself as the “Entertainment Capital of the World,” and tourism, gaming, and entertainment represent a large portion of the city’s revenue.

In addition to its renowned casinos, Las Vegas attracts visitors to its outdoor shows, including simulated volcanic eruptions, pirate duels on artificial lakes, and laser cannon displays.

Indoor casino shows, with world-famous entertainers, are also popular. Annual events include the National Finals Rodeo and the Las Vegas Invitational Golf Tournament. Las Vegas is a popular destination for tours and conventions, including COMDEX, an annual computer show, and The Las Vegas Motor Speedway.

Once we got there we booked in to the Circus, Circus, this is a very large casino and resort on the strip that has a circus inside of it. It has a kid theme to it where you have day care for the kids while you take in the sights and gamble the kids are so mesmerize that they want miss you at all.

We ate at some of the best five star restaurants that Las Vegas had to offer, I can recall that we went to this one restaurant that was called Bourbon Street Corner, it was set up like the New Orleans French quarters.

Lisa wanted seafood gumbo I decided on a sea food platter, now I know not to try to many people’s gumbo, because people throw all kind of types of sea food in their gumbo, you have to be careful, once our food came to the table everything was looking good.

I am sitting across from Lisa; we started eating; now my seafood platter had frog legs, clams, shrimp, fish, stuffed crabs, lobsters, and oysters. In addition, I order French fries with it.

I tried to get everyone to eat some of the frog legs but they were too afraid to try them out. Now I know that Lisa didn’t eat squid, I am looking at this squid in her dish and she’s just running her mouth having a good time with the kids, when she took a spoon of her gumbo, I’m looking at the squid going in her mouth, I’m saying baby I thought you said that you didn’t like squid. She says I do not. Then I tell her. Why you are eating one now.

Her whole expression change immediately when I asked her the question because while I am asking her the question we are all looking at this big as squid that is hanging out of her mouth, she spits the half-eaten squid out and I am laughing so loud everyone turns around to see what was so funny, that was hilarious.
Marriage life

Valentine's Day had finally arrive we had went shopping back in Oakland for our special day, Lisa picked out all of our clothes, it was her day and she wanted us dressed nice, but casual.

We had an eight thirty appointment to get our license and to fill out all the papers. It did not take us long once we did all of that, it was time to go to the chapel, Lisa also picked out a beautiful chapel, where we would get married she didn't want to do the commercial wedding like everyone else was doing on Valentine's Day.

The lines were around the corner everyone was getting married thank God Lisa was smart enough to make arrangements at the chapel.

Once we got there, it was a nice older couple that would do the honors. Everyone took their places, Michael had the wedding ring and Aisha and David all stood by our side, we both said our vows and once we were pronounced man and wife, we kissed and shook the pastor and his wife hand, and we headed back to the resort.

I had finally done it I'm happy I'm glad I did it, this women gave me beautiful kids and I knew she loved me, and I was diffidently in love with her as well.

We had to get back to Oakland because Monday we were due back at work, business as usual, soon as we arrived back at home Lisa asked me to carry her through the front door of our apartment now that we have enter into matrimony.

The minute we got home Lisa went straight to the phone to inform her mother that she finally had gotten married, now my mother in law did not believe it until she had a visual on the marriage license, can you believe that she actually wanted to see our license.

Lisa told her that we would come over later on, once we have gotten situate.

Eventually Lisa would be a good girl and continue to allow her mother to control her, I told Lisa that she did not have anything to prove but she insisted that we all go over to her mothers, so we may please her.

After my mother in law was, satisfy with us being married. She was completely a different person towards me, she always invited us over for Sunday dinner, she always wanted the kids over, she made plans for all of us to go to the state fair together she paid for the whole trip I got to meet Ben Vereen, and Tony Bennett, we had a nice time.

Lisa and I would get up and prepare breakfast for the kids or sometimes we would all go out for breakfast we had a nice deli at the end of our block where we would eat at a lot, that's the beauty of California everything is right there for you, you can take a little stroll to your favorite eatery.

Now after breakfast we would go house hunting we did this for almost a year, we enjoyed going driving with the whole family looking at the homes.

Lisa and I decided that we were going to get a brand new house I really didn't want anyone else problems, once I had gotten all the paper work I needed from the veterans department I was set they gave me a voucher for a home loan.

Now I had to fine a bank that would be the lender, this would be an aggravating experience, with all the doors closing in our face.

I would witness racism once again way out here on the west coast, we did not give up we kept on pursuing our dream my mother in law got involve as usually, she knew a real estate agent, that she would introduce us to.

Now this Young woman was so greedy she tried to get us in all kind of use homes, some of them were in nice neighborhoods and others were not at all to our liking, no back yard, little front yard I needed something for the kids.
We decided to venture out a little more, out of our district long as we were within the perimeter that we can get to work at a reasonable time.

My brother in law and his wife lived in Vallejo, a city in Solano County, northwestern California, a waterfront community at the mouth of the Napa River, on San Pablo Bay.

It took us about an hour drive to get there, we started house hunting in the area, they had newly housing development units close to where my brother in law Philip was living, and it was close to the water park.

The house that Lisa and I felt in love with was two stories it had five bedrooms and a two-car garage, the master bedroom was up stairs with a balcony that overlooks the Bay when you step outside of your private patio.

The back yard was the Bay and the Pacific Ocean now the second floor view was a walk around balcony that overlooks every part of the house, the kitchen, the dining area, and the balcony goes around the whole inside of the house.

They were asking for one hundred and thirty nine thousand once the agent added all the numbers together with what we made and with our bills and expenses our mortgage would be fifteen hundred a month everything was included, all we would have to worry about was utilities.

Now once we had gotten all the paper work in order we started taking to the banks, or any finance company that would be willing to take a chance on us, because we are first time homebuyers.

In the process of us house hunting, I can recall on this day we were on MacArthur and Telegraph I stopped at the light it had turned yellow and the armor truck that was in front of us kept going through the light and that’s when it was broadsided by a car and flipped over.

All of the money bags felt out of the back onto the streets my wife and kids and me were just looking in amazement at what was taking place, people came from everywhere they ran out of there houses and cars they were taking bags of money they had coins all over the highway.

By the time we got home, it was on the news they were telling people to turn all the money in, they were going house to house trying to recover the money.

The next day they had people buying new cars and clothes, they were giving themselves away buying all the merchandise. Later I started questioning myself why did I not get out and get some of that money.

I decided, that it was time to take a trip home to New Orleans, instead of driving, we agreed on taking the train.

Now once we got to New Orleans, Lisa, I, and the kids pretty much had the house to ourselves because my mother was always working.

You remember Donna she would find out that I am back in town and come by the house. Now my wife wants to know about this woman. I tells her that this was an old friend, now this girl Donna would come by all the time on purpose, trying to befriend Lisa, and she would always come over wearing these tight shorts, and always looking sexy.

Lisa starts asking if I every screwed her, because she’s acting like she ‘s trying to tease me, now on some days when I was out hustling, I would run into Donna and she would always ask about Lisa, I would tell her that she is home with the kids.

Moreover, that is when she would ask me to make love to her again; I would tell her that I am married now those days were over. Nevertheless, every time when I get back home Lisa would question me on where have I been and accusing me of screwing Donna.

This went on until Lisa could not take it anymore and that is when she confronted Donna by slapping her in her face with her slipper. Lisa took off her slipper and slap Donna in the face. I immediately step in to break them up.

This all took place in front of the house; I had a couple of my friends over as well. I was waiting on someone to pick up a package. My friends were there to watch my back, but I would have to leave and make another run I did not have time for this drama, so I told both of them to chill the F### out, I’ll be back in a minute not to go anywhere and that they better get alone.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

When I got back, they were both in the house kicking it and laughing, now my boys saying boy you are a bad boy, in my mind I knew I had to get Lisa away from this women because this women here would turn Lisa out to the streets if she had her way.

Doing this time my two partners had Baton Rouge on lock they both had Mercedes Benz one white and one black, and one of their little brothers Carl had gotten murder, I took him up under my wings I use to give him the keys to my car and let him go play with the young women in his life.

He also started running for us we had so much cocaine we did not have enough bodies to move it fast enough. We had to move this product from New Orleans, all over Louisiana, Texas, California, New York and New Jersey, everywhere I traveled we had the hook up now on this day Carl had to make a delivery to the east. Upon him meeting the buyer, the deal would take place on Interstate Ten. Carl slip up and let the buyer tricked him in his car, when he got in the car someone was kneeling down in the back seat and shot Carl in the back of the head, he died on the spot.

Word got back that it was another one of my so call friends. We never could prove it, he would later come up and take over the Fisher projects.

Around this time my neighborhood was call the killing fields, people was getting murder and kidnapped on a regular bases and the police was also dirty, they were some of the biggest dealers and murderess around.

My wife could not handle this life style, I thank manly because she did not know whom to trust, because she was never this nervous back in Oakland this was the rock cocaine capital. This is where the rock was started. In Oakland and I know that Lisa have many gangsters’ in her family because I have met them.

This was where all the real gangs were. However, I would find out later the leader who started the Bloods was from Louisiana. Everybody remember Felix Mitchell, my wife knew them all he was one of the biggest drug dealers around, hell her first cousin robed banks for a living he would come by after hitting a lick with ninety to one hundred thousand at any giving time and she would not be spooked.

But here in New Orleans she was a nervous wreck, she introduced me to Huey Newton, unfortunately when I met him he was on crack, but he stayed right down the street from us he stay at the Lakeshore Towers in the pin house suite in Oakland.

After the shooting of Carl, another one of my close friends would also be murdered. His name was also Michael, he had introduced me to one of his cousin, her name is Felicia, now Felicia had gotten pregnant for me but somehow the baby got strangle in her tubes and died, she had her tubes tied and she wasn’t suppose to get pregnant.

The thing that was so creepy was Michael and I had a long talk the night before of his death. We were sitting in front of Felicia’s house on Avondale garden road; it had to be around one thirty in the morning. Michael told me that he was getting tired and that he was not going to always be around to watch my back he told me to take care of my kids and to make sure, that I always be a provider for my family.

Even though I was sexing his cousin up, he told me to take care of my wife and kids, it was like he knew something was going to happen to him, he had been quite all day and he had this distance look on his face, later on that day we were all at my house.

Michael would leave my house to go and pick up some drinks and food for the grill; I gave him about sixty dollars to go in on some of the belongings.

We were getting the grill ready everyone is chilling around the house. I had asked Mike to let me ride with him but he always wanted me stay with my kids. My kids called him uncle they were very fond of him, he would always tell me whenever I go out to make sure I come home with a present for everyone.

I never have forgotten that because every time that I would come home I would give Lisa money and I would have the kids toys are some kind of games.

We would later find out that the police had stopped Mike right around the corner from Donnas’ motherhouse and that when the police tried to handcuff him he beat the police up, ran in Donnas’ motherhouse, and hid in one of the rooms until Donna brother told the police where he was.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

He had a warrant out for his arrest he was known for selling drugs he had gotten hot, but he was family, now the block is hot police everywhere, we get the news Moon, and I go to see what is going on, Donna also comes with us I leave Lisa and everyone else behind.

Once we get there to Donnas house, the police had taken him away so around this time I am tripping, by the time I get back home Lisa starts tripping, she is out of her mine, the kids crying. She asking me where have I been you been out fucking that bitch.

I am trying to tell her what happen she was not hearing it so I shake her to get some sense in her, guest what she does. She calls the police on me I’m tripping we got all this dope and guns in the house not lying around its all stash but the idea she has call the police on me.

Once the police gets there it is a women and a man cop now this is on the West Bank, so I really did not have any pull in Jefferson parish, if this would have been in Orleans parish it would have been a different story.

The female cop didn’t want to hear anything she automatic puts the cuffs on me and tells me I am under arrest now my kids are crying telling them to leave there daddy alone I tell them not to do this in front of my kids.

By the time I get to the county, Michael is nowhere in the jail, I asked around if anyone came in fitting the description of my friend Michael. Within the hour, Moon had come to bail me out, now while we were on our way home Moon told me that the police took Michael somewhere and beat him pretty bad form jumping on one of theirs. Therefore, we got word he was at the hospital, so we went straight to the hospital where he was supposed to be.

Upon us arriving at the hospital, we met one of my friends sister she also worked there her name is Regina. Now you remember Regina my friend Don Sister well she is off the dope and now she is back working, she is a register nurse at the hospital it was nice seeing her again. Especially off the dope.

Once we get off the elevator Michael’s mother and his niece and nephew were right there they informed us that Michael was dead, Michel was founded with crack cocaine up his rectum, and you could not identify him from the beating he took.

When I arrive back home everyone was asleep I am still mad from Lisa calling the police on me, my boys mad at my wife for jeopardizing everything, they don’t tell her but they tells me.

Right then and there I knew I had to get Lisa back to Oakland, but not until we find out what’s going on now, Michael’s niece would enter into my life her name is Kawanda we call her cookie she would become my best friend in life and she still is today.

The National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) came to see me and they wanted to form a march for Michael, they were accusing the police force for the killing of Michael.

I took them to meet Michael’s family his mother did not want anything, now I was upset I wanted her to pursue it but she was tired of the struggle, she already had two sons in Angola state prison, and she had seen too much already, my neighborhood was infested with drugs and killings.

The funeral was pack they had news cameras and law- enforcements was everywhere. The NAACP was there of their own free will. I had Kawanda to do my hair I was wearing finger waves back then.

After the funeral, I poured some liquor on Mike’s grave and I told everyone that I am out of here, and got my family and headed back to Cali.

New Orleans was too much; I see what Master P was talking about now in his music at that time, New Orleans was definitely Bout it, Bout it.

All of this took place in a two-week span, now once we got back to California; it was back to the basics, work for us school for the kids.

We still didn’t have any luck finding a lender for the house we wanted to purchase, but we never gave up, as time went on, I started getting bored, Lisa and I was spending least and least time together.

Every morning I took the kids to school, the boys were going to school in China Town neighborhood, and Aisha was going to Grass Valley, in the Oakland hills.

Page 132 of 188
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Lisa would ride the Bart train to work instead of driving; it was easier to just catch the train into San Francisco.

When Lisa got off from work the kids and I would pick her up, then drop her off at school in Oakland, then I would go back home with the kids help them with their home work, feed them, I would cook dinner some days when I didn’t feel like going out to eat.

Then around eight thirty we would all go to pick their mother up at school, then we would go home, Lisa would take her bath and I would prepare her meal while she is getting situated, then she would do her homework and then get in the bed.

Now it is time for me to go to work, I worked from eleven to seven; I liked to leave at about ten thirty, because I would make a couple of drops on the way.

This was an everyday thing Lisa was always tired are busy I wanted to make love to her and she was always doing homework or something for the kids and she did not have time for me anymore.

Now we still function as a family we would have our outings, such as spending time with her family going to church going out eating still in the process of buying our home.

I just was not getting any sex, now when I did all she did was like turn on her side or something and allowed me to get off, and then she would go clean up and go to sleep.

It was as if she just was doing that to shut me up, now before we gotten married we were always making love now that we are married she’s not interested in love making anymore.

So as time went on it was the same routine, after I would drop the kids off at school, I started doing things a little different. I started walking the boys to school on some days, we had many good times walking together. Aisha would spend most of her time at my mother in laws house. She would take her to school and I would pick her up later.

I started meeting many of the kids’ parents my kids went to very diversity bilingual school. I started spending time at their school helping, I was doing the same thing I did for Yana back in New Orleans at her school. I love nurturing the youth.

After school I would take the kids to the park, I would let them unwind, and then I would take them to McDonalds, then we would go home and wait for Lisa to get off from work that was the highlight of my day being around Lisa.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Chapter 24

When it all falls down

What would be the last straw the most devastating thing I have ever done so far in my marriage was commit adultery, allow me to confess my sin.

As you recall I was getting board, because my wife was not satisfying me anymore she never wanted to make love to me anymore and when she did it would be dull and not exciting, but it was not as if I purposely went out trying to cheat on my wife.

I had just gotten off from work I rushed home to see Lisa off and to get the kids and take them to school as usual, once I dropped the kids off at school, I took the scenic route home, I stop at western union to pick up some money and to also pick up a money order.

Once I came out of the western union, I was in my car let the top back, lit up a cigarette put my music on. When I spotted her on a pay phone, nice sexy young woman about five six, she had on this half shirt showing her flat stomach with navel piercing and she had a piercing over her eye.

She winked her eye and asked me can she have a ride, and of course I told her yes, she immediately got in the car and I introduced myself, and she then told me her name was Lacresha.

We were on lakeshore drive right around the corner from Lake Merritt, I asked her, where was she heading, and I told her that I was on my way home that I would drop her off where ever she needed to go.

She then asked me to drop her off at the east mount mall; this was on the east side of Oakland, I agreed to honor her request and in the process of going to the mall, we were having small talk when I asked her what she did for a living, she told me that she was an exotic dancer.

She also told me that she worked at club Sasha in San Francisco in the red light district; I looked at her real good and could see that she could have been telling me the truth, when she said you do not believe me uh. I told her that I did not know what to believe. In addition, that is when she offered me a private dance.

I then asked her how she could give me a private dance; she told me if I get a room that, she would give me, shows that I want forget.

We decided to get a motel room Nestled in the Oakland Hills right around the corner from Knowland Park and the Oakland zoo, now once we got there it had to be between ten thirty and eleven in the morning.

Now once we got in the room I realize that we did not have any music, she said put on some videos, and we put the television on the music channel, then she pull out a bag of weed and a cigar and stars to roll a blunt.

Why in the hell I always meet these kinds of people that are into the very thing that I am trying to run from.

Once we smoked some of the blunt she then pulls, out a half pint of gin, and then this nice rap song came on, and that is when she would give me a performance that sent me on a world wind that lasted about nine months.

Lacresha and I would have an affair that would not last long but she was the one that started my escapade, Lacresha and I would have sex more than once, when on this particular day she asked me to bring her home.

Once I got to her apartment I founded out that she didn’t live far from where I lived she stayed on Grand Avenue, she invited me inside when I got inside I met this beautiful young lady and her sister.

It was Sasha, Deedy, and Lacresha, now Lacresha was their cousin, and Sasha was the owner of this strip club where I would start spending all my time.

Sasha and I would get very friendly; she would have a serious talk with me first. She told me to leave her cousin alone that she is too young for me. Then she asked me how old did she say she was. I told her that she said twenty-four; Sasha laughed and told me if I did not want to go to jail, I had better leave her alone.
Sasha and Deedy told Lacresha to apologize to me, I was so embarrass, the girl looked every bit the age she said she was and she knew what she was doing.

Lacresha still tired to hook up with me later, but I refused I would not never stoop that low, the girl lied to me and my dumb ass should have known, but her cousins told me to not beat myself up over it long as I didn’t mess with her again.

I told them that they did not have to worry about, the girl was built in all the right places she would have fooled anyone and besides they let her work in the strip club all hours of the night.

Sasha later told me that on some nights she would allow Lacresha to make some extra money at her club.

Now Sasha and her little entourage were getting ready to go on the Jerry Springer show they also asked me did I wanted to join them, I think the taping was held in New York, I decline and told them that I will be looking for them on television.

Sasha told me that when they get back, that she wanted to hang out and take me to her club and to introduce me to some of her friends.

I must say I was very interested because this woman was beautiful and fine as hell, her stage name was Brown Sugar, and she had her own establishment and a beautiful home up in the hills.

Now the apartment that we use to hang out at, was her mothers, I would eventually meet her family as well.

Back at home with my family things were going well, I still wasn’t getting satisfy, we were also in the process of buying furniture for our new home that we were sure to purchase we would spend a lot of time at the department stores and furniture stores, Lisa was definitely planning our future.

As time went on, this particular night, I was at work taking a break on the roof of the Kaiser center. When my co-worker call me on the radio to tell me that someone wanted to see me. I came down thirty something floors on the elevator to the front desk. When he pointed to this gay person, I told him to stop playing and he told me that he was serious, and I am looking at this person coming my way.

Then he asked me if my name is Michael and I asked him who wants to know and that’s when he tells me that Sasha wants me and that’s she’s waiting in her car.

I told him to tell her to come inside, I scan the monitor that’s on the front desk in the lobby, that’s when I see Sasha steps out of this red BMW in these nice ass stilettos looking so good. When she enters the building all eyes are on her she commands the room on her looks alone. You hear her stilettos clanking every step of the way. Once she approaches, she gives me a nice hug. Then she asked me could she have a minute of my time.

My co-worker said that he would cover for me, so Sasha and I go outside when she tells me that she was sorry for coming to my job. That is when she asked me for my cell number. Once I given her my number she then asked me, could she borrow one hundred dollars, because she cannot get to her bank until the morning?

I politely reached in my pocket, peeled off five twenties, and gave it to her with no questions, her and the gay dude see’s all the money that I had on me, I always kept a lot of money on me. She thanked me and told me to call her whenever I have some free time then she gave me her private number.

Then she apologizes again for coming to my job unannounced. Moreover, that is when she jester with her finger while she is sitting in the car for me to come closer. That is when I bent down to the window when she grabs me by my collar and gives me the most passionate kiss that I have had in a long, long time and it sent chills through my body.

The next day I called Sasha up, she was happy to hear from me. She invite me to meet her at the lake because she had to pick up her nephew from her mothers and I told her that I would have my kids with me as well and we decided to make the day out of it and have lunch with the kids at the lake.

I decided to walk since the lake was literally in my backyard. That is how close Sasha mother and sister stayed from us. We were talking to each other on our cell phones while we both walked to meet each other,
once we met we kissed each other again, I introduced my kids to her, and she did the same, she talked with them for a little while, we all got along just fine.

After we left the lake, we decide to go to her mothers and then we decided to have lunch there instead of the lake. Once we finish eating, it was time for me to head out; I had to get ready to pick up Lisa. Me and the boys made a pack that they would never tell mommy anything about another women, they were young at the time that was another reason why I didn’t think that I would get caught because the kids didn’t have any idea what was going on.

Now I know this was stupid of me very stupid, just hold on it gets crazier along the way.

Sasha finally invited me to her club, I have seen some of the flyers of this club, and I also seen a commercial are two of this club, it finally hit me that I am with the owner, I would have never thought.

Now I am with this person you have to see her to know what I am talking about this was a beautiful woman and if you have been reading my book you know I have had my share of women but this young lady, Sasha was as beautiful as they come and so sexy.

When I got there to the club, it was definitely her place she had this big picture of her in flashing lights on the marquee read club Sasha, she was wearing a nice bikini with these high hell stilettos on, it was a big window picture.

The club was very big, nice and clean, I started this routine going there twice a week, we would pick up many of her friends, and I must say a lot of them had their own houses not apartments but houses.

Some days I would not go to work, Lisa thought that I would be at work, and then there were times I would leave early to go to work; now Lisa starts asking me why I am leaving so early to go to work.

Sasha and I would have great sex, every where and when every, we use to hang out at the Jamaican clubs go dancing go out to eat, one night Sasha and I was at the club not her club but at the Jamaican club we both love to dance.

I stayed out late this night when I got home Lisa was waiting up for me. I told her that I was working late. Now one thing about Lisa she did not call to check up on me she took me for my word.

About two days later, I came home from work when Lisa gives me a ticket that came in the mail. I had gotten a parking ticket the night of Sasha and me night out dancing.

Now I had some explaining to do. Because Lisa traced the time and date of the ticket she had derived a conclusion and drilled me on why did I lie to her about being at work when I was out in San Francisco on 3rd street at 2:45am.

Then she wanted to know who was I with, I told her that I was with my friend Rico. Now she bought my story I guess that is why she cannot stand my friend Rico because I would lie on him quite often.

I would also start bringing Sasha with me to drop off my packages to the Arabs, and just give her about two or three hundred dollars just for riding with me.

Lisa was not tripping on money because she was getting my paycheck and plus every lick that I had I would give her about five hundred dollars, extra every week she was getting broke off very good.

I started getting reckless I was too comfortable with what I had going on I thought I was untouchable I had really gotten the big head.

I had a good job, I had gotten transfer to yellow freight on nights of course, and I was the only one working this big yard where the trains would unload all their merchandise. I had all the access to it all before it would go notice.

In addition, with the drugs, the money was pouring in and I was spoiling the kids and Lisa.

Sasha also started spending money on my kids buying them the latest tennis shoes and timberland boots, some nights when we all would go to the club, Sasha and I had our special seat where Sasha would seat me.

She was always running around making sure things were in order with her managers, around this time I am familiar with everyone, the dancers that I was cool with started giving me their money to hold for them while they are dancing on the stage. Sasha would give me these bags to put the money in for them.
I'm sitting in the front of the stage all the women were giving me they're money and I'm drinking whatever I wanted to drink for free.

Now once the club closed Sasha would give her managers instructions, and then we would leave to go to the Oakland hills we would drop off some of her girl friends. Then she would invite two or three of her girl friends' home with us and we would get high and freak out until it was time for me to go home.

Once I get home I all ways would put money in Lisa hands and kiss her and see her off to work, then I would get the kids ready, then I would take them to school then I would head back home for a little sleep.

This went on for about nine months, until the night I and my family was out eating at this restaurant, we were having a good time, I can recall this event like it was yesterday, I had gotten up to use the bathroom.

On my way back from the bathroom I notice Lisa is on my phone, I had made a mistake and left my phone on the table and I did not turn it off I had it on vibrate.

As I approached the table Lisa started looking at me crazy and she's on my phone talking and looking at me, when I got back to the table to have my seat Lisa jumps up out of her chair and hit me in the head with my phone, in the front of all those people in the restaurant.

She tells me oh so you are fucking somebody uh. I am asking her what in the hell are you talking about. everyone's looking at us because Lisa is yelling from the top of her lungs the manager of the restaurant comes over, I apologies to them and asked for the bill, Lisa steady going off I'm trying to get the kids and Lisa out of the restaurant because I know my wife when she goes off she goes off.

Once we get to the car she tells me that this girl name Lacresha said that I made love to her more than one time, I am trying to drive and stop my head from bleeding trying to keep the kids calm. I am also trying to keep Lisa from going in the red because I know this woman would kill all of us. When she gets mad, she just flips.

Now once we get home, I pretty much calm the situation down I'm thinking everything will be alright, I retrieved my phone when Lacresha calls back now you remember that I haven't had any dealings with this girl once I was confronted with how old she was.

I did not know that she was tripping because I was with her cousin now, Sasha and Deedy told me not to worry about it.

In addition, Sasha knew I was married and she respected it.

Now Lacresha is telling me that she wants to see me and that she needs me and she wants me to make love to her I politely tell her that I will never have anything to do with her again and to never call this number again upsetting my wife, she tells me that I will be sorry.

Everything is getting back in order Lisa has calm down some. She was getting the kids together when the phone rang again and that is when Lisa wanted my phone she gets my phone answers it and then she goes off again.

Lisa tells me yeah nigga you fucking that bitch because she just described my house nigga. Moreover, she described my kids she told me about the clothes and tennis shoes that she bought my kids. That is when Lisa tells me how else she would have known this. She then tells Lisa to tell me to go outside and look at my car, I ran outside to see what she was talking about, when I noticed all my windows were busted and all four tires had been flattened and my wife's car had not been touch and her car was right in back of mine.

When I got back in the house Lisa was crying and on a rampage she went to hitting me with everything she could get her hands on, and little did I know she had calling the police on me again.

This time I would put my hands on her because I was totally in the wrong I was busted I had let Sasha and Deedy and Lacresha come over one day because I had to pick up something from the house and she told me she needed to use the bathroom, was I a sucker or what?

The police told me that I could leave or that they would take both of us to jail they told me to give her time to cool off, so I left for a few hours.

I called triple A for roadside assistants, when they arrived; I told them where to bring my car and to drop me off at the location that I would be when my car gets fixed.
The next day I received a call telling me that my car was ready, once I picked up my car I just rode around for a while thinking about what the hell I have gotten myself into.

It was getting close for me to go to work so I decided to go home to see if she was cool, soon as I walked in the door she went off again she started punching me in the face yelling the kids started crying.

I grabbed some clothes and took off; I rented a room right off of MacArthur and Telegraph once I got situated I went to work, I was so distorted I could not function properly I couldn’t continue living in a motel, Lisa didn’t want be back at home I’m trying to give her time to cool off.

About the second week I am at the motel chilling when all of a sudden, the door gets kick in, it is the Oakland police department and they are all over the place, they are yelling get down! Get down! On the floor!

Then they started asking me where is she, I am like where is who? That’s when they started tearing the room up and then they put me in the back of the police car it looks like the whole police force was out there.

One of the police officer goes to the manager office and discuses something with him and when he comes back, he tells the rest of the officers that the manager told him that I have been in the room for the last two weeks by myself and that I never had any guess in my company.

Now all of a sudden here comes Lisa, my mother in law, and some more police, Sasha, and Deedey, and their mother, now the police come back to the car and starts to ask me the same questions again.

Now I’m listening to Lisa telling the police all of my business, she is telling them that I sell drugs for a living and that I am a killer to check my record I am from New Orleans and I go around killing people for money, that’s what she is telling these police.

Now I am getting mad because they were already investigating me because of a lot of things were going on and my name was floating around, the reason my name was in the air was because I just happen to be in the vicinity when certain things went down.

I really thought they had gotten to Lisa and scared her up because she would tell me that a detective called are came by the house asking certain question about me.

Come to find out that Lacresha ran away from home and they thought that she was with me, after the police ran their checks on me they started leaving one by one. I heard them saying he is clean, Lisa and her mother would all leave. However, Lisa takes off in my car and the police let her take it, the car was in both of our names.

But the police didn’t care they just let her drove off in my car, once all the police left it was just me and the two cops that had me in the back of their police car, they took off with me in their car I’m thinking that I am going to jail.

They continually asked me about Lacresha I’m telling them that I don’t know where she is they are telling me that the girl is a miner I’m telling them that I have not seen her in over a month.

They brings me under this overpass and gets out of the car and drags me out and just starts beating me until I fall down on the ground and started yelling and cursing I’m telling them that I don’t know where she is.

They finally have enough and put me back in the car and drives off again this time they takes the handcuffs off of me and drops me off in the heart of the crip and pushes’ me out the car and tells me we will be hollering at you blood.

I am tripping I just started walking and kept on walking I guess they knew that I was with some dirty cops know one said a word they just let me through without a problem.

It took me about forty minutes to make it home once I had gotten there, I notice that Lisa car was there and my car was also there, my mind was made up she had called the police on me one time to many she was trying to hurt me for sure.

I remember that I had my triple A card key in my pocket and my master card on me, I open up my car with the plastic card key, and stole my car.
I headed to Berkeley, where I would rent me a room, once I got to the room I took a shower then I got myself together, then I drove to the marina, now at this marina we had a public phone that was rigged up that you can call anywhere in the world for free.

I use to use this phone every chance I got, on this particular day It came in handy I made a call to my mother told her what was going on and then I told her that I would be coming that way in a couple of days.

My mother told me that she was not staying at the house she told me that she was letting Andrée and her boyfriend live in the house. I told her that I needed somewhere to stay until I sort things out.

I asked her were they paying any rent to live there, she told me that they were behind on their rent, now knowing my mother she probably was just letting them stay there for free they were kin to us in some way or another.

I told my mother that I would allow them time to find a place. But I am coming home to claim the house, now I did my Own investigation on my mother’s house to see who was living there. I called one of my boys, he gave me the scoop that Andrea’s boy friend was on crack and that he put her out the house and that he is staying there by himself.

Upon me finding out this information I called my father and gave him the run down and he told me to go there and put them out and if I have any problems with anyone including my mother that he would come and burn down the house if I couldn’t live there no one would.

On my way back to the motel I spotted Lisa and her mother and the kids in the car I guess they were out looking for me again.

Now the funny thing about this was Lisa did not want to have anything to do with me but she was looking for me to make me more miserable then I already was.

Lisa also knew my favorite spots and she knew that the Berkeley marina was one of the places I would take the kids to fly kites and to watch the dolphins and whales.

I spotted them, they drove right by me I didn’t think that they had seen me, but I was not taking any chances I immediately left the location where I was, I then made my way back to the motel.

Upon getting back to my motel room, I called my supervisor to tell him that I had a family emergency and that I am going to have to resign, and that I will need my check as soon as possible.

Now my supervisor tried to get me to reconsider, but he did not understand the magnitude of the situation and I was not going to tell him my personal business.

He told me that it would take at least seventy-two hours; I told him that it would be fine but if he could speed up the process, it would be appreciated.

He told me to come by Friday morning, and the day was just Wednesday, I continually working leading up to Friday so that I may keep myself occupied.

Lisa was still upset, she did not want anything to do with me I had gone too far this time.

Friday arrives I went to my job signed some papers, what I should have done was asked for a transfer, because they were also located in New Orleans. Anyway, I received my check, went to the bank, cleared my account then I went and got a road inspection on my car to make sure it was up for the ride across country.

After the inspection I then decided to get a haircut, while I am chilling waiting on a chair in the barber, I started contemplating, was I doing the right thing, the only thing that I could come up with was Lisa had went too far trying to get me arrested telling all my business to the police.

I am thinking about what my friends said back in New Orleans that she was dangerous, that is the reason I had to get her out of there in the first place because they all seen her call the police on me before.

After I left the barber shop I drove to the filling station filled up with premium gas bought a six-pack of Budweiser and some potato chips, a pack of Salem regulars and then I head for the freeway.

After I had gotten out of Los Angeles I set the cruise control on eighty miles an hour and I would not let up until I had to, I was running at a hundred miles an hour for the most part of my journey.

Now at nighttime I had to slow it down quite a bit because of the steep mountains and the not knowing with all the whining curves.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

It took me from noon Friday until Sunday morning to arrive in New Orleans only time I stopped was for gas and to use the restroom, I would pull up at the drive thru window at McDonalds get something to eat and push off again.

I got really sleepy I rode with my windows down to try and stay awake I was also blasting 2 Pac smoking weed and drinking I finally had to pull over to get a little sleep I would stop at the rest area in Lake Charles, Louisiana.

Once I got to the rest area I got in the passenger seat, reclined all the way back, and started thinking, I once read that marriage is a loving lifetime friendship with the added dimension of sex.

Couples need to cultivate frankness in their private talks about what they enjoyed sexually; sometimes we mistakenly assume that our spouse can read our mind.

Nevertheless, since our spouse cannot instinctively know everything about us sexually, we need to express what we like best.

Perhaps “love expression experiments” could spark a couple to better sexual pleasure.

Here I am back in the same situation that I was before not expressing my feelings on how I feel, and by me not being able to express my feeling I am all ways getting hurt, causing. Me to make bad decisions

I woke up four hours later from sleeping or day dreaming whatever the case was, and put the pedal to the medal again, destination home.

I finally made it home it took me two and a half days to arrive from San Francisco to New Orleans driving none stop only for gas and two relive me.

....... .......

Before I go any further, I would like to expound on a few things I came to rationalize in my head, but after I would realize that the fault in our relationship was totally my fault it still did not slow me down.

I did realize that I was the thread that kept the fabric together in my family, meaning I was the one that kept the family going, what would become of my kids now that I have abandon them?
Living the lifestyle

When I finally made it home I went straight to Donnas’ house, her mother answered the door gave me a nice hug and said it was nice to see you, and then she immediately ran to go and get her daughter. When Donna came to the door, I did not get the greeting that I was hoping for. Let me explain something to you, I was looking so fresh and clean. I had on these nice Scooby doo’s, I had my Rolex on that Lisa had purchased for my birthday. I also had on some nice jeans, a butt up shirt, hat, and a nice bomber leather jacket I had on a nice chain around my neck, a nice pair shape diamond earring in my ear, and I was so materialistic back then.

Donna came to the door and told me that she would catch up with me later. At least I thought she would have invited me inside. Since she did not seem to thrill about seeing me, I decided to go by one of my friends’ house. Mark and his brother Wesley lived in their mothers and father’s home, we all grown up together.

Once I arrived, they were happy to see me, things had changed since the last time that I was at home, everyone was trapping what I mean about trapping is that, they had their own spot where they would sell crack cocaine.

Now every neighborhood had at least one or two traps on several streets, a trap is where you would have everything for your customer, whether it was supplying the customer with females or food, drinks or drugs or paraphernalia.

Some of my friends had their own houses and that is all they were doing, trapping, and my friend Mark and West was doing the same thing the only difference they were doing it to take care of their drug addictions.

I did not have anywhere to stay so I decided to stay with Mark and West until I move back in my mothers’ house I gave Mark and West about two hundred dollars to allow me to live with them.

The way I gave them my money was on the condition that they flip it and give me back my money I knew they would agree because all they wanted was to smoke.

Upon me staying with them is where I would run into Kawanda again, when I left Kawanda she was young and small but now she is unbelievable gorgeous and sexy, but she is my best friend Michael’s niece, you remember my friend who had gotten murdered by the police?

Well Kawanda would come by the trap house with another one of my friends name Vernon, now Vernon would always ask me to introduce him to my family so he can purchase some weight, weight meaning a large quantity of cocaine.

Upon him constantly asking me to help him, he would also make me an offer that I couldn’t refuse, he would later ask me can he move in with me, when I move back in my mothers house and to give him a couple of weeks and we wouldn’t want for anything.

I told him I had to make a run that I would be back in about two weeks. I told him I was going to Atlanta to visited with my sisters and my father and that I was going to surprise my mother in Chattanooga Tennessee. Mothers day was the following Sunday and I wanted to see her it had been awhile since I seen her.

Everything worked itself out perfectly because my brother-in-law happens to be in New Orleans for the weekend. I met him at my cousin house in the seventh ward he and one of his friends were going to the jazz festival, he told me that after the festival he was going to be leaving and that I could follow him back to Atlanta.
So I told Vernon and the crew that when I return that we will get things popping, I and Greg would later meet up and fill up our tanks, and head to the interstate it took us seven and a half hours to make it to the house.

It was nice to see everyone again everyone was doing fine, Claudette and Kathryn were both living ten minutes apart, and my father was living in East Point about thirty minutes from them both.

After spending time with Claudette and Kathryn I decided to go and spend some time with my father, I spent the weekend with my father. Clay and I started going to the strip clubs I started spending a lot of time at club Nicky's. In addition, the Blue flame.

You remember Clay from New Jersey my father's other son from another mother, well my father retired to East Point in Atlanta Georgia him and Bernice; it was a nice cozy home on the same street of the rapper Chinggy.

I told my father that I was going to visit my mother and that I would see him later he asked me to stop by on my way back from Tennessee, I told him that I would try that I didn’t know.

My father told me how to get there, that was one of the great things with my father whenever I wanted to go somewhere and I was not sure how to get there my father would give me the directions. Once I got to the freeway, I called Tekla up because Tekla was now station in Atlanta as well, Claudette had given me her phone number, and I have wanted to talk with her for the longest.

I called her and told her that I was in town and that I would love to take her out to dinner. I wanted to talk with her, she asked me where was I, I told her that I was on the freeway heading to Tennessee, she told me that she was on her way out and that to call her on my way back in town.

I still did not have Tekla out of my system. To tell you the truth I still love her today no matter how she feels or anyone else one thing I cannot do is hide my true feelings.

Once I arrived at my mother's, she was happy to see me. My Aunt Dee was also happy to see me. I told them that I had come to spend mother's day with them. We had a good time and we had a long talk. I told my mother what was going on with Lisa and me.

Now what had surprise me the most was my aunt my aunt was talking with me and then out of the blue she slaps me across my face I was so shock, all I could do was rub the side of my face.

My aunt tells me that if I keep on making her sister worry that she was going to kill me. I asked her what in the world she is talking about, and then she tells me that she loves me and walks away and then she tells me again remember what I said.

I never told my mother; actually, this is the first time I am speaking of this. The Time had finally come for me to leave after I kissed my mother and my aunt; they gave me some sandwiches and an igloo with a six-pack of beer and told me to be careful.

I headed back to the freeway; I reached in the cooler to retrieve a beer when I spotted a Ziploc bag in the cooler. Inside the bag was $250.00 dollars, my mother had given me that is how my mother was she was always looking out for me. I decide to go straight back to New Orleans. I did not call my father or my sisters I by passed them all, I went straight back to New Orleans to try to take over the streets.

I did not think to call Tekla, she told me to call her on my way back from Tennessee, maybe if I had contacted her my life would have not turned out the way it did. The only thing that was on my mine was getting back to the hood, it took me about nine hours from Tennessee, soon as I arrived back, I got some of my boys to follow me to my mothers house to put who ever was staying there out.

Once the person seen my crew he did not put up a fuss all he did was say give me a minutes to get my stuff then he was out. I moved back in my mother's house now my mother gave me the house.

When I moved in the house, everything was new. Every room was freshly painted and every room had brand new furniture, the whole house, every piece of furniture was new from the kitchen appliances, to the washer and dryer to the garage, to the bedrooms, I did not have to pay utilities, I did not have to do anything but supply my food I had cable television the works.

I eventually allowed my friend Vernon to move in with me, it did not take us any time to get on our feet and get a name for our self.
Michael's Life Time Memories  By Michael Brown

My cousin had gotten caught by the feds he had been caught with tons of cocaine. He had to do five years in prison. By him, being in prison everyone had gotten spook so my other cousin who was in charge of the operation told everyone that we were getting out of the cocaine business. Because they were giving people, too much time.

Therefore, he decided to give up his connection to his best friend, now when he did this I was angry with him because I thought that he would give me the connection. However, he would tell me if I still wanted in that he is into marijuana now, if I wanted in he will hook me up with the marijuana it was coming off the water twice a week and he need a runner.

I did not want in, I wanted the crack this was where the money was, and the lifestyle had me hooked.

Therefore, my cousin would give me Dog’s phone number, my cousin friend who he gave the business too. I would hook up with him and start from the ground up, Vernon and Kawanda and I. Donna would later appear, she was also addicted to the life style.

Now Donna had a boy friend that was obsess with her she would stalk her wherever she would go, she would leave my house, and the dude would be down the street hiding under cars looking for her.

He became dangerous, one night one of my friends name Mookie had enough we were on our way to the Saint Thomas projects, now Mookie was a heroin dealer he had a lot of weight but he was also hooked on his own product. He stayed right around the corner from my kin folks uptown.

Mookie was a hot head we were getting in the car when Donna saw her dude hiding on side of a car with a gun pointing it towards us. Mookie jumps out the car tells the dude to come here the dude would come. That is when Mookie asked Donna right in front of her man and everybody else whom do you want to be with? In addition, that is when Donna told him that she wanted to be with me.

That is when Mookie told him that the next time that he pulls a gun he better make sure he use it then he slaps the dude then tells him your bitch chose him pointing at me. Moreover, he gets back in the car and we go on about our business.

We all started laughing because we all had forgotten our pistols no one was strap. Everybody was telling Mookie that he was crazy.

We had an arsenal but we did not think to bring any heat with us on this night, now we had AK 47s and grenades, tech nines, Mac tens you name it we had them. I also I had my trusted 45; I normally kept it with me at all times. Mookie was married and had a beautiful daughter. He had a nice house his right hand man had gotten kidnap.

He never was found still to this day no one knows what happen or who took him. We knew something strange happen to him because he had just gotten this big beautiful house built and he had just moved in a week before he came up missing. Mookie started losing his mind getting paranoid thinking everybody was out to get him.

One day he got stop by the ATF and had a shootout with them, we all would witness the event on television, he was shot up pretty bad, but he lived. Now he is in the feds.

His wife would come by one afternoon and bring me to their house and tells me to get all of that mess out of her house; this is where everything would change for me upon me receiving all of Mookie possessions.

I now had his AK 47 a case of grenades about four ounces of heroin, I then went home and that’s when the house became the dungeon and I became king David of my neighborhood.

The story gets even better at least I thought it was I am not thinking about my family at all everything is moving so fast the word was out that I had, come from California with all the drugs I am still riding around with a California license plates and driver license.

Now one of my friends down the street was a Jefferson parish police. He uses to stop by the house to talk with me. Therefore, by him coming by, more and more police started speaking to me next thing you knew the whole force pretty much knew me. Some would harass me and some would come by whenever something goes on in the neighborhood they would ask me to intervene and help them out.
Around this time my trap was banging we were pulling in about four thousand dollars a day, selling rocks not counting the heroin sells and we were just getting started.

I would eventually start selling weight again, halves and whole birds, at a good price for dog, I would only do this for some of my people, this was not a everyday thing it was only to come up when I needed too or if the opportunity presented itself.

I would charge them anywhere from twenty-two, to, twenty-seven g’s. The prices you here those rappers talk on their records talking about ten a key that’s just talk you would never make money you would lose every time.

Only way, you can do that for those prices if you were selling them fifty or more at a time. I decided to get rid of the grenades that we had because we were all scared to have them around, we decide not to try and sell them it would be best to just dump them in the Mississippi river.

Donna and Kawanda would recruit more women that way when the customers would come to purchase their drugs the women were there to keep the customers buying; all they had to do was look sexy.

We would rent out rooms feed them whatever they wanted. I can recall us keeping one person in the trap for a whole month we would feed him slow all month long what ever he wanted food drugs women. It did not matter we were there to please you see he was getting about a thousand dollars a month from the veterans department from severing in Vietnam War.

We would make sure that he wouldn’t leave we had someone watching him so when the time comes for him to get his check some one from the crew would bring him to cash it and bring the money and him back to us.

The women jobs were to keep them there until their money was gone and then we would give those about thirty minutes to clear out until they come back with more money.

The police would stop me on the regular, every time that I would be in my car. Kawanda would one day tell me that there are four strange men that have been camping around the neighborhood watching the house.

Everyone is informing me of these people and everyone thinks that they are pursuing me, because they never showed up until I got there so now they are thinking that I brought the heat to the neighborhood.

I decided to get rid of my car because it was hot and it was eye candy with California plates, and besides Kawanda had her car and Vernon had a truck so I was good, we decided to drop it off at the dealership.

Once I got to the dealership it was closed I wrote a note put the keys under the floor mat and we headed back home, when I got back home bounty hunters had come looking for me to take me back to Oakland California. I was wanted on kidnapping charges and taking a minor across state lines.

I immediately called Sasha and explained everything to her and she told me that she would take care of everything; she told me she knew where Lacresha was and how she had lied and told the police that she was pregnant by me. Her mother said that she would not press charges on me because her daughter was unstable and it was all her fault.

Sasha told me to look her up whenever I get back that way to California. She also told me that my wife and her had gotten to know each other, now I did not know what she meant by that and I was not going to asked.

My wife had called the police on me again from California and told them that I was a drug dealer and that I killed people for a living.

The police came to my house and wanted to search, they said that they had a report that there was criminal activity going on inside.

While they were there, Lisa called and asked me how did I like fucking that bitch and that I deserve everything that comes my way.

As time went on Lisa would stop harassing me, I would continue in my criminal activities. I and Vernon and Kawanda and Donna was doing everything together we were going out to eat we were going on
shopping sprees everyone decide to go and get some gold in their mouth. Kawanda and Vernon went and got a mouth full of gold Donna and I refused to do this.

I came close to putting gold in my mouth, I thank God that I did not, and this was like telling the police that I am a drug dealer. Kawanda was already beautiful this only made her look sexier. She had a checkerboard grill every other tooth was gold top and bottom.

I also met a neighborhood friend who I had grown up with in the neighborhood, but his family move away when they were young his name was Michael.

Now let me explain my friend I met him one day I was outside early one morning checking out the surroundings of the neighborhood when this red corvette pulls up and it is he, now I have not seen him in ages he was really Claudette’s age they all was in the same circle.

Now Michael was going through some things when I met him, later he would tell me everything Michael was smoking crack like it was going out of style; little did I know Michael was a millionaire?

You see Michael’s mother died accidentally at the hospital and he had a malpractice law suit where he was awarded ten million dollars.

Everyday Michael use to come by and want quarter ounces of cocaine and he wanted me to cook it up for him, he would later ask me to rent him a room, because he was not ready to stay at his house where him and his mother lived.

Now Michael have another brother name Kenneth and they were not getting along Michael would later give his brother two hundred thousand dollars and tell him to have a nice life.

Michael became to trust me one day he was at the house The house was always full of women we were jamming listening to the music selling dope, when I seen that Michael had drop something out of his pocket. I reach down and picked it up; it was a hundred dollar bill. I gave it back to him he told me to keep it, that day we became the best of friends, he would later tell me that the people that he use to hang around would have kept the money and would have not told him anything.

I was having sex with every female that came through my front door. I was on a rampage, and then everyone wanted a piece of my friend Michael. Because he had the money, Michael would fall for Kawanda, and he was crazy about Kawanda cousin Candice. I was also crazy about Candice, some days Candice and I would hook up and spend the whole day together. She had a man but she was feeling me as well.

Kawanda use to get mad at me because she could not understand why all these women were falling for me whenever I have sex with them we could not get rid of them.

She would tease me all the time, telling me that I must be good at what I do. Because every time that I have sex with them they were hook, they wanted to move in with me. Kawanda was getting curious she wanted me as well, and I knew this, I also wanted she but she belong to my boy, so I would not mess with her and she was the only one that I would not hit.

Now sometimes Vernon would make runs out of town, it would be I and just the girls, and Kawanda brothers would come by and help look out, they all knew how Kawanda felt about me and they knew how I felt about her. I would later tell them, that I was in love with her.

All her relatives wanted us to hook up. Kawanda and I use to sleep together but never have sex or make love. She would lay in my lap watch television. I would rub her feet, sometimes when it was just us at the house and other women would, come over she would get mad. Because she knows what I was going to do with them, and every woman would ask me were Kawanda and I having sex because how she acted when other women came around.

My boy Vernon never knew the love I had for his girl all he knew that we were close because I and her uncle was best friends, and I and her aunt are real good friends her aunt was my sister Claudette’s friend, Karen.

I told Michael that he could not mess with Donna, Bonnie, or Kawanda, but everyone else was fair game.
Bonnie was another one of my close women. Donna and I would fall out sometimes, and that is when Bonnie would come in the picture and take on the role of my woman. She would clean the house up, cook for us, and entertain me.

She would eventually tell Donna that she was going to move in with me. Donna told her that she could have me for a little while but whenever she wanted me that she had to move over or join in.

Donna had another girl friend her name was Sissy now Sissy was so fine and good looking we all hung out together she was part of the team as well, Sissy moved to Biloxi, Mississippi a few blocks from the beach some weekends Sissy would come by and then invite us all back to Biloxi with her.

Sometimes it would be Donna, Bonnie, and I. I could never get Kawanda to go anywhere she always wanted to stay in the hood for some reason. I tried to show her the world I offered her many times to travel with me.

But I did not let her slow me down because you know I love to travel, now I and Sissy would become lovers one day I and Donna had just gotten finish having sex we were talking about our fantasies when I told her that one of mine fantasies was to have her and Sissy at the same time.

Therefore, Donna started making this happen everyone I wanted to be with all I had to do was tell Donna. Moreover, she would make it happen. On some occasions, it would be three or four of us. One time I had eight women it was just I the only man there. I had all of those women doing all kind of things we had such a great time, the power of drugs, we had a ball and that night we all went skinny dipping at the beach until we were told to get off the beach.

Now it only took forty-five minutes from my front door to get to Biloxi, we would live in the Grand Casino, whenever I wanted to get away for a while, I would call Sissy up, and she would invite me to come and stay with her. I would do the same for her whenever she wanted to stay with me she was welcome.

The life I was living was like a dream I had everything at my fingertips, Michael, Vernon and me would have some great times together. Michael would take us all to the Kawasaki shop and tell us all to pick out motorcycles. Vernon and I both picked out Ninjas one was a 750 and one was a 900. Michael got him a 1500 and we all road off back to the hood.

The next day we got them painted this flip flop paint job they had eleven different colors on them they were looking a different color every time the sun would shine on them.

We also got them chrome out. We had the wheelbase extended four inches this was to make the bike looks a little longer, and to keep it from popping wheelies that much.

Now every weekend everybody who had bikes would meet at my house and we would have some of our neighborhood friends wash them.

Michael would also purchase a Hair Salon, we would go on shopping sprees, the money was rolling in, I and everybody was getting high because we could not take a lost because Michael had my back.

I can recall one night Michael and I was riding chilling going tricking. Now do not forget it is not tricking if you got it. Michael was hitting the pipe while driving, he thought that the police was behind us when he took off full speed ahead and rapped the Vette around a light pole. Thank God that we did not get hurt that bad.

The car was total, after giving the police a statement we called for Vernon to come and get us, when we got to the house they had the entire furniture move out the way and was dancing having a good time.

One room I walked in they were freaking like crazy, this went on every day and night at the house.

The next day we went to the bank Michael had gotten a cashier check for 95,000.00 dollars and told Vernon to bring us to the dealership, we got to the dealership when they were getting ready to close it took us all day to get there we stop at so many places.

Once we got to the right place Michael spotted what he was looking for. It was a brand new 2000 Corvette, green with peanut butter interior drop top. It was on the show room floor Michael told the salesperson that he wanted the car; the salesperson told him that they were closing to come back in the morning.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Michael asked for the manager, once the manager came Michael told him that he would be purchasing that corvette and that he wanted to also purchase the burgundy expedition extended version.

The manager asked how you intent to pay for this entire order sir. Michael pulls out a certified cashiers check. The manager confirms that the check is legit, and gets all nice to us now, we accepted they’re change of attitude, Michael tells him to draw up the papers and gives him his accountant business card and tells him that his people would come by first thing tomorrow for his change and the paper work.

The manager gives Michael the keys, Michael throws me the keys to the expedition he takes the Vette and we head back to the hood.

We pulls into the gas station to fill up the tanks we are looking all over the places to see where to put the gas it took us about fifteen minutes to find out where to put the gas we had to get the manuals out.

These were some amazing times, the front of my house started looking like a car lot we had all of the latest toys that you could imagine. I can recall some days I would take the corvette out, the police would stop and harass me then I would go and put the Vette up and get in the expedition the black or the burgundy one. In addition, get stop again, then I would go and put that one up. Moreover, get on one of the bikes and the same police would stop and harass me again all of this happens in one day I got stop three times in one day by the same police because I was a young black man riding good.

We decide to put on a concert, a gospel show at the new arena at Bayou Tech, now there was another neighborhood friend his name Leonard, now Leonard lived right down the street from us they were also Claudette’s friends, Leonard was a up and coming record producer.

He actually put everything together, all Michael did was pay for the whole thing he all so bought a brand new Cadillac fully loaded all white, and he gave Leonard the keys.

The concert was going to be a blast we had a stretch limousine coming to pick us up in front of the house, and we were going to be back stage.

The guess that was booked for the show were Shirley Cesar, Yolanda Adams, The Wynans brothers, and a few more stars. It was star studded. A week before the concert took place, Michael would find out from his accountant that Leonard was ripping him off they would have a big fight Michael took his car back and park the car by one of his women house.

Michael was so mad that he told Leonard that he wish that his mother would die, and guess what the next day she die, I am not kidding you, she die. Leonard was furious he calls the police and sent them straight to my house looking for Michael.

I told the police that I did not know where he was that he did not live here,

Once they left I called Michael, I knew he was at one of my girl friend’s house Michele. I told him that they were looking for him we decided to go down to the police station and see what they wanted.

It was Vernon, Michelle, Michael, and I. Now Michelle worked in this area. She was a parole officer and she knew everybody. I also knew my boy who was also a Jefferson parish police officer. We would find out that Leonard had told the police that Michael was the reason why his mother dies; he told the police that Michael said that he wished that his mother would die.

They could not do anything to Michael because he did not do anything, he did not make a verbal threat. It was just a coincidence that his mother happens to die at the time of Michael’s words.

Michael would hire another one of our friends name Gannon. Gannon was a producer for power line records; he was a new up and coming producer as well. They stayed around the corner from us, and he also rode with us on the weekends to the sideshows, he had a beautiful bike as well he had his bike painted the color of a soldier rag.

He would introduce us to cash money the Hot Boys, now they are coming by on their tour bus on their way to the country towns are passing through going to Texas.

Mannie Fresh was selling one of his trucks, Michael decided to buy it, it was this nice excursion, and this truck had DVD’s in it. Nintendo play station, I mean this truck was car show material. It was the color of the rainbow.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

So by now I am so consume in this life style, I am not thinking about my wife at all, I was thinking about my kids, but my dumb ass was not thinking clearly, I just couldn’t stop to take control of my life.

The day of the concert, everybody wanted to roll with us. We decided to go to the mall and purchase some new treads, after we got back from the mall, it was getting close for the car to come and pick us up. We were so wasted, it was Michael and Kawanda, Candice, Bonnie, Gannon and I. Vernon did not want to come he wanted to keep the trap moving.

Michael spent a lot of money that night but it paid off, it was a sell out and he made a profit, after the concert we went back to the trap to get our freak on, that’s all we did, Michael was like me, that’s all we wanted to do was chase women and get high.

Now I told you that Bonnie and I was also together I also had another woman in my life her name was Marlene this woman was so beautiful her mother worked with my mother at the hospital and I and her siblings were all friends.

She was high yellow and so sexy all of her sisters were good looking she is a couple of years older than I. She was my sisters’ acquaintances. They all went to the same school. Marlene and I spent a lot of time together she was married to this Puerto Rican dude. We called him Chico now Chico had a good job he was an underwater welder and he traveled all over the world on assignments.

When her husband was not in town Marlene would come by and spend time with Donna and me. We became lovers because she was hook on the dope. I had what she wanted, she was very jealous whenever I had other women at the house other then Donna. She would get upset with me some nights Marlene, Donna, and I would just stay in the bed all night and day.

One day Marlene came over unannounced and I would not let her in, she got very mad at me, she walked around my house breaking every window in the house. Before I could get to her Bonnie came out of the house to whip her ass, but she ran, and then Bonnie called the police on her.

Can you believe that after that incident that we were still lovers, this woman had me I could not believe that I had her because she was that beautiful, and I was always amazed at myself for getting my sisters friends? I told you I grew up with so many women around my house being the only boy and my sisters had all of their girl friends over at the house, it was a little boys dream.

Bonnie would always come to my rescue and beat women up for me, she wanted to beat Kawanda up so bad because she sensed that Kawanda hated on her, she thought that Kawanda and I were having sex the way Kawanda was always acting.

Now Bonnie was a good girl she would come from work after grocery shopping, she would have something for everyone, she knew what kind of cigarettes everyone smoked, and she would bring everyone’s favorite drink.

She would come in get her something to smoke and then start cooking then she would dance and get high the rest of the night. Then she would want me to make love to her. She was always liking to dance sometimes she would go and strip at the local clubs and get paid she was really a good strip dancer.

My next-door neighbors the Balls they had one of their cousin name Fay. Fay came down for the summer with her daughter from Los Angeles. She was a thick chocolate good-looking woman. She was also on the dope. Therefore, I started feeling her the dope we started having sex. Kawanda got so mad at me telling me that I am going to catch something. I told her that I am not crazy. I told her I am not hitting these women without protection. The only ones I was hitting without protection was Donna and Bonnie.

I told Fay cousin Kevin that his cousin was a freak; but you know blood is thicker than water. Well any way Kevin told Fay what I had said she got upset, she called me over to the house when I arrived next door, I was not thinking much of anything I thought that maybe she wanted something to smoke. I knocked on the door she tells me that the door was open to come on in.

I opened up the door, now once I got in she came from behind the door and stabbed me in the arm with a steak knife the knife stuck in my arm I had to pull it out. I was in a state of shock everyone in the house was tripping. I politely went home bleeding Kawanda, started tripping Bonnie gets mad I told them that Fay stabbed me with a knife.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Bonnie storms out of the door mad as hell. Kawanda calls the police. Vernon starts hiding everything telling me that the shit has finally caught up with me. All of them women he was always telling me to get rid of some of them everyone was always telling me that I had too many women that I needed to lose some.

Bonnie comes back to the house she said she couldn’t find her but when she finds her that she was going to beat her ass, the paramedics, arrived at the house they stitched my arm and then soon as they finished, the police arrived and before I could say anything the girls Kawanda and Bonnie had told the police everything.

The police went next door to the Balls residents they told the police that she was not there, so the police asked could they search the house upon them searching the house they founded her hiding in the closet.

They arrested her she stayed in jail about two days I did not press charges on her but I did let some of my girls beat her down when I found out that she was on her way home I told my girls that I would break them off if they took care of this matter for me.

I told them that she was on her way in a taxi soon as she got out of the cab everyone was outside waiting everyone already knew the deal.

The minute she got out of the cab I had two girls beat her ass real good, that was some of the adventures I had messing around with crazy women, other than the ones that I had crushes on.

I had so many crushes on my sister friends and now the time had come that they wanted me or they wanted the drugs whatever it was I was grateful I couldn’t believe it.

I am not going to stay on this topic to long I just want you to get a since of my life and the life I was living they were many more women in my life and very many more of my sister friends.

I can’t really put a time frame on this life memory but my nephew Lamond came to visit from Atlanta this was doing the time Donna and I was staying together just getting started and all of Lamond friends he had grew up with was into the drug game selling drugs and I was pretty much beefing with them all.

I raised these young people and now they wanted to act grown because they were selling drugs being disrespectful so my crew and I pretty much shut them down after lamond left.

Lamond started hanging with them on a regular; these were his friends they all grew up together. one day I woke up and told myself that I didn’t want my nephew involved in this life style and I damn sure didn’t want him to turn out like me or like his friends.

So what I did he would never know unless he reads this? I called his mother my sister and told her to get her son back to Atlanta ASAP. Because I did not want, the streets to take him like everyone else. I stated before that my neighborhood had nothing to offer it is a drug-infested area. You either get strung out on drugs are become a drug dealer. What every the case may be. You would become a statistic. Therefore, I told on him, I did not want him around this lifestyle.

I thank God that I had told my sister and she made him leave, now today he has a beautiful wife who loves him and two beautiful kids only God known’s what would have become of him if I didn’t tell on him. It was because I love him and I do not wish this life style on anyone.

After that, I would meet another person and guess what his name is. His name was also Michael he owned a Temp Service, he was also hooked on the dope, I use to give him, well I mean I use to sell him ounces of crack for the low, low, and he would allow me and some of my friends to go on these jobs and get paid for it.

We would go to all of the events in the superdome or at the arena, motor cross, concerts, truck pulls; you name it we were there Donna, Bonnie, Vernon, Kawanda, and I. We did this just to go to the events, and if we were going to be paid for it so be it.

As time went on Kawanda was still getting upset with me because I had too many women in my life my appetite had gotten outrageous for sex.

Every night after trapping I would play my theme song by DMX, they all knew what this meant it was time for me to retire for the night. I would always leave one or two of Kawanda brothers to take care of things while I am sleeping or entertaining.

Kawanda would always say you make me sick, my song was ♦ I love my niggas, but where’s my bitches, ♦
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

When that song came on, they knew automatic to put out all stragglers, Big Vernon would go to his room. I would go to my room with whoever was there or who ever had turned me on doing the course of the day. Some nights I might have two or three with me at one time, this went on every day and night for a long time.

Michael would still be blessing the game with his fortunes. We were making so much money that we got careless one night we had just gotten back in. Vernon, Kawanda, Donna, and I had been riding the motorcycles. We parked them on the front porch, we decide not to open the trap this night we had the girls cook some t-bone steaks and French fries we ate and watch Scarface again for the uh-teen time.

We Smoked a couple of blunts and decided to go to bed at least go to our rooms because we all had gotten horny from drinking and smoking, we made sure the door was secured and turned in.

Now I cannot speak for Kawanda and Vernon but Donna and I had great sex that night we felter to sleep right after only to be awakening by men in ski mask and semiautomatic weapons drawn on us.

They made us get out of the bed. We were both in the nude they walked us to another room in the house where Kawanda and Vernon was also laying on their stomachs in the nude tied up with hands behind their backs. When they told us to come in the room and lay down, one of the assailants slapped Donna on her ass and told her to get her fine ass on the bed then they tied us up as well.

This made me so mad he looked at me when he did this but I just bit my tongue and did not say a word. We were all face down in the nude laying on the bed while one was searching the house. I had about two and a half ounces of crack on the dresser and I had my jewelry on the dresser we had a couple of grand in the house. We did not have that much on us we had just spent all the money on reupping and the rest of the dope and money was across the street at Ralphs house Ralph is Dorothy son.

The jack boys seen all the material things we had all the cars and motorcycles and the trap we had was really shutting everybody else down, we should have known someone would one day come and see about us.

After they have discovered the money and the dope they still weren’t satisfy they wanted more money and dope they hit Vernon in the head with the pistol, and then they grabbed Kawanda pointed the gun at her and told him if he love his bitch he better give them the rest of the money.

They took all of the jewelry off the women, rings, bracelets, necklaces, one of the guys see’s me looking at them and he hits me and ask me what in the hell I am looking at.

I recognized the tennis he has on, why because I had a closet full of the same shoes he had on. They were dope man classic the black ones. In addition, I gave Kawanda cousin a pair now I am thinking because her two cousins were jack boys and they all ways hung together.

I am thinking that this cannot be who is robbing us. Because I always had shown them love whenever they came by the house, Kawanda instead of her talking to Vernon she starts crying telling me to tell them that we do not have anything else. Like that’s the only way that they would believe if I tell them, Kawanda is looking at me crazy. Donna is tripping I am thinking that Donna crazy ass might try something because Donna is known for fighting she just did not care she was not going out without a fight.

So I take over I tell them man look! Yawl got everything, that is it the money and the dope! I told them that we just bought those motorcycles that is out front and that is where all the money went.

They took my Rolex that Lisa bought for me that watch alone was almost ten thousand dollars they had diamonds all over it that was special to me.

After they left we were all tripping, they dropped a trail of money and dope on the way out the house, we were tripping so hard we had forgotten that we were all naked once we realized that we were naked we started laughing. Once we gotten ourselves out the ropes we put our clothes on we went outside they took our car keys and threw them so we would not follow them.

After things calm down that night, we got so loaded we did not trust anyone after that everyone was a suspect, I think Kawanda set us up she was really trying to get back at Vernon, because Vernon had beaten her one day.

She eventually would tell me in so many words that they were not going to hurt me. Donna told me that they called my name by accident when they told us to lie down.
Michael's Life Time Memories  

By Michael Brown

I did not hear anything but I was mad as hell. I never told Vernon because I was loyal to Kawanla. I told you we are family she did something for me that no one had never did she let me know how much she meant to me that's why I would never turn by back on her, also because of her uncle Michael who had gotten murder by the police and my kids known him as uncle Michael.

The next day we got a steel door put up and we had gotten it welded from the inside we had another door that you could see outside but you could not see in. We also had gotten to dogs a rock and a pit bull we were on point from then on we had surveillance twenty-four hours a day.

We promised each other that we would not get caught slipping again, I didn’t let that many people hang out at the trap after that it was strictly business only my closes friends were allow to chill and of course if you had a lot of money you were able to stay.

As time went on Vernon uncle started coming around on the regular he always was trying to get information about how much money the trap was making, he was pressuring Vernon to allow him to eat from our plate.

He wanted to come an trap with us Vernon would eventually let him come over one day and of all days he picked the day when it was his turn to make the run to Texas, we rented the car for the run, stashed everything and told Vernon that we would see him when he gets back.

Soon as he left Vernon uncle comes by, what would trip me out is he pulls up in a taxicab I immediately told him to keep going I did not want him getting out the cab in front of the house with a white man driving the cab now he should have known better.

He tells the driver to keep going and then the cab stops two houses from mine only two houses before the cab leaves he starts walking back in my direction.

He comes to the house an wants to purchase a quarter of an ounce once I give it to him he wants to sell it here at my spot he tells me that Vernon told him that it would be alright. I told him that I did not care what Vernon said I told him that he could not make any money here.

He stayed a while checking out how my spot was jumping he started asking me about prices, now I noticed the shoes he had on they looked like police shoes. I told Donna I don’t know if she thought that I was tripping, but I didn’t trust anyone after we had gotten robbed.

He would finally leave, I and Kawanla had the house to ourselves we kept on looking at each other with this look in our eyes we both wanted each other so bad but we would not go there.

We took care of each other and we did not let anything come in between us, we decided to take a ride we were afraid that we would do something that we would regret later if we did not get out of the house.

I telling you the feelings was always there whenever we were together. I remember on our way back to the house the police stop us coming into the neighborhood the police came up to the car and said what’s up Mike where are you coming from. You mine if I search your car.

I said man why are you harressing me. He looks in the car and asks Kawanla. Mrs. why are you hanging with this dope dealer? Kawanla tells him I am not trying to hear nothing that you are saying this is my family and we are going to always be together that is why I am hanging with him.

Kawanla did not have a problem telling people how she felt that is why I love this woman to death.

When Vernon got back to the house, I informed him of his people actions, meaning his uncle. He told me that he would take care of it; I did not think much of it ever again.

One night we were at the house just chilling when Vernon got a call from his uncle he told me to make a run with him. Vernon and I would never run together trafficking drugs just in case one of us gets pop. We would have each other’s back; we knew that we would be there for each other if push came to a shove.

But on this night Vernon wanted me to ride with him, Kawanla talked me into doing just that, ride with him, he told me that his uncle wanted to purchase some weight, he told me that his uncle had some friends in town that needed some work.

I told him to drive, he gave me the package, we were riding with two kilos of cocaine, I was constantly in the side mirrors feeling unconfortable about the whole situation, but this was my family he needed me and it was business. Vernon decided to light up a blunt to keep us calm.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

The ride took us about forty minutes once we arrived at the spot Vernon told me to come with him I told him that I am staying in the car I told him if he is not out in ten minutes that I am coming in.

I was not worried because it was his uncles’ apartment I was just inpatient to get back home with the women and besides I was supposed to be off this night and here I am riding dirty with him he would definitely have to pay me for this one.

Vernon would finally come out of the apartment on time and we headed back home. We did not do that much talking on the way home; it looked like something was on his mind. I knew his uncle was pressuring him. I did not know what his uncle had on him but he was always stressed out with him.

Weeks went by, months went by, and Michael and I were still kicking it. We would go and visit his mother grave then we would go and sit on his front porch he was not ready to enter the house. So all we would do was just sit there for hours and then he would thank me and then we would leave.

We did this every Sunday. Vernon, Michael, and I would also ride on the bikes some days we would take the girls riding with us to the lakefront. Michael would always tell us to close the trap down that he would pay us for the day. In addition, he would tell us do not let anyone in, no one but females.

As time went on, things were the same I would meet a lot of people alone the way I met Judges, Doctors, Lawyers, Politicians, Entertainers, Police Officers, I’m talking about some of the biggest drug users and dealers.

May-May would come in my life again. One day I am in the house chilling when Vernon comes in and tells me that there is this beautiful Japanese woman in an SUV looking for me. I am tripping as I wander who it could be so I go and see who it would be and to my surprise it was my ex, may- may.

And she was dressed in her doctors outfit with her stethoscope around her neck looking so good, she had this beautiful smile when I approached her, I went to kiss her on the lips she turned her head and allowed my lips to kiss her cheek.

I asked her what is up with that, and that is when she told me that she had gotten married. She gave me her hand so I may see the ring on her finger, I congratulated her, and that is when I asked her was she happy she told me that she was.

She told me she heard that I was back in town because my name was ringing all over the place she told me to be careful. I told her that I still loved her and she told me that she still loved me as well.

She told me that she had to go and see about one of her patients and that to have a nice life then she gave me a handshake and drove off that was my last time seeing her.

I do not know if you remember the story I told you about when I was in elementary school and I got caught smoking weed by Coach Lee. Well guess what. This man came to the trap with this female to buy some dope, when I seen him he was shock and I was to for that matter.

All I could say was what goes around comes around. I told him how he had gotten me suspended from school back in the day for messing with drugs. Now look at you messing with drugs. I did not sever him and I told everyone else not to sever him. He begged me so I gave in and told his girl that she could come in but he had to wait in the car.

The lifestyle, the power, the women, the money, the sex, I was hooked. I had forgotten all about my family.

I am sure by now you can get an idea of the life that I was into I can go on and on about all the women that I had in my life but I am going to stop here, just know this, it was much more that I wound encounter.
The feds are watching

It did not take long before the feds would come and see about us after Vernon and I delivered the goods to his uncle that night. I am going to take you back a little before the incident I would make runs to Baton Rouge Vernon and I and sometimes Mice would come.

Now every time Mice would say man looks like someone is following us I thought that he was paranoid, now Vernon was thinking the same thing.

Until one morning, it was Kawanda and Donna and Vernon, and I. It had to be around ten thirty in the morning we woken up cooking some ounces of cocaine, Michael also were coming by to pick up a quarter that morning.

Michael would finally arrive, take a couple of hits, and then leave with his product and tells me that he will holler at us later. Vernon also said he had to make a run. Now he told Kawanda that he was going to take her car, he would leave his bike in front of the house now there are three motorbikes and an expedition, and the vette in front of the house.

The girls were drinking and smoking early when the phone rings its Vernon he tells us to get everything out of the house that the police are following him. In addition, he is telling us that he is not tripping to hurry up and get everything out of the house. He also told me that he would take them on a ride until we get everything out of the house.

Soon as Vernon hangs up the phone the phone rings, again this time it is Christine. Now Christine lived in the front of the neighborhood she told us that they had counted fourteen cars including SUVs’ all black and that, they were suiting up and she told us to be careful she did not know where they were going but this made us move faster.

I told the girls to gather everything up and leave the house. I told them to go to Donnas’ mothers’ house. Until I get in touch with them. I started getting all the weapons out of the house and throwing them to my neighbor next door from my back yard. I would also take some of the dope to Ralph’s house across the street. Now once the girls were gone, it was just I. I made sure that the girls took some of the dope as well I didn’t like everything in one spot just in case we lose one spot it would not be all a lost.

Vernon calls back and tells me that he is in the neighborhood heading my way; he sees all the feds in front of the neighborhood, plus the ones that is following him.

I told him that Christine called and told us, I told him that everything was clean, he told me to meet him outside. I stepped out of the house when Vernon was pulling up, I told Vernon to leave the car right where it is at, and once he got out of the car we started walking.

We started walking down the street when we decided to go the other way we turned around and soon as we got to the corner there they were coming about twenty cars now they spotted us and zoomed down on us surrounding us they jump out of their cars yelling, on the ground! On the ground! We proceeded to follow orders that were given to us. Then that is when they grabbed Vernon and told him that he was under arrest.

Then they pulled out photos of him exchanging drugs they had all kind of pictures of him they also had pictures of him that night when he and I drove to his uncles’ apartment. They would ask me who all the motorcycles and cars belong to that was in front of my house. I told him that they belong to friends.

One of the officers stated that they were coming to the house they told me that I was lucky that we did not stay in the house because they were coming to rip the bars off the doors and tear the house up.

It was a good thing that I decided to lead them from the house they asked me did I have any charges on me. They told me to be honest because they said they did not want me. They got whom they wanted but if I lie to them that they were going to take me as well. I told them that I think that I have a warrant for a simple battery, they told me that they were not interested in small stuff and that I was free to go.
They told me to tell my friend bye they told me that he would be gone for five to seven years. I am looking at Vernon in the back seat he tells me to take care of his girl that is all he kept telling me Mike take care of my girl.

I told him to keep his head up and that I love him. Now everyone was outside trying to see what was going on. I decided to go back to the house, when Kawanda and Donna showed up not a minute sooner.

After the feds pulled off smiling, they were thrill to have gotten one of the bad people off the streets that is what they were saying.

I told Kawanda and Donna about the pictures that they had of Vernon and I showed them the card that the feds gave me to call them later on to discuss some things.

I decided to bring all the motorcycles inside; I waited until nightfall to retrieve some of the dope that was stash across the street. I told Kawanda and Donna to split the other dope up that they had and to do what ever they wanted to do with it.

A couple of days went by when Vernon finally got in touch with me. He gave me the run down that his uncle was working for the feds. In addition, that he was in the feds holding facility with him. Moreover, that he came clean and told him everything that was going on, he told him he had been popped by the feds a while back and they made a deal with him.

And part of the deal was he had to give him up, his uncle was an informant for the feds they had gather up enough of evidence to come and see about us, thank God I didn’t go in the apartment with him that night.

In addition, I knew something was up with him you remember I told you when he came by to get some drugs and then he wanted to sell them there.

Moreover, all the cars that were following us we were not paranoid it was the real thing they were on to us. You know they say paranoid is not paranoid unless it is real. After this Kawanda and I relationship would really take off we were like husband and wife now she would practically move in with me. I gave her almost all of the dope that belonged to Vernon and I started getting rid of all the marijuana for the low, low.

I had become so spook I did not want too much of dope in my possession. I got rid of all the guns all but my forty-five, Michael would finally start messing with Kawanda. I was not angry or anything. I understood this man is a millionaire what women in her right mine would not give him some play.

Kawanda made sure she was paid this dude paid her good she would call me to come and get the money from the motel where her and Michael would be. She would ask me to take it to her grandmothers. Michael would give her thousands of dollars just to spend a night with him.

Kawanda and I would go and visit Vernon almost every weekend. He told me to give his dad and his brother his motorcycle and to give them his dope. I told him that they could have the bike but the dope is mine. I put in the work they did not and everything else was mine. I told him he knew how the game went.

Besides, I took a lost because of all the credit that he had out, that would also be a lost so I was out of my cut there.

As time went on it was now just me and Kawanda, and Donna. Donna was still in the picture but only when she wanted me to make love to her are when she needed something, Bonnie was there as well then Bonnie sister came into play a beautiful young woman name Rose. I would ride her on the bike and Bonnie would get jealous of that because she knew it was just a matter of time.

I started partying more, tricking more with so many women that they were fighting over me. Kawanda was still running them off, and I still have not had sex with her.

She just could not stand to see me with another women but it was all right for me to see her with other men how crazy was that.

Now Kawanda birthday was coming up, it is September 20th and mine is September 23rd so we decided to throw a party, upon me throwing this party. I dropped the news to everybody that I was moving I told them that I am going to Atlanta.

This did not sit well with them they were upset but I knew I had to leave the lifestyle behind or it would have been the death of me. I told Kawanda cousin Mark that if he pays me on regular bases that he could
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

take over the spot until I tell him otherwise. Kawanda would get upset with me she did not understand why I did not give her the spot. I knew she could handle it but I knew that I would have not been paid.

I cannot stay in one place to long I have to keep moving I guess I required that from my father.

Now do not get me wrong it was hard for me to leave this entire lifestyle behind a millionaire for a friend with all the toys at my disposal and all the women. The feds would get in touch with me again and threaten to take the house from my mother if I did not stop the criminal activity. That is why the officer gave me his card, he wanted to talk with me, and he wanted to give me a way out.

Why he gave me, a heads up I do not know but I think God. Mr. Bush would also inform me that he had heard about the drug bust and he would tell me to stop before I lose the house.

My mother called and told me that she had gotten a call from the police department and they told her that if I did not stop that they were going to put me a way for a long time and that they were going to take the house away from us. After all, of this I had made up my mind that it was over. After the party, I would leave.

Come to find out they had been watching us for a long time on and off for some years when we thought we were being followed we was.

The night of the party was great we had a blast, women from everywhere Kawanda, and I would dance all night we would give each other these crazy eyes that said all you have to do is ask and it is yours. However, we would never take advantage of the opportunity.

Now it took me another three weeks to finally leave for Atlanta, before I left I met another one of my sister’s friends her name is Carolyn now this young lady was sexy and cute and she was on the dope one night she came by to get some dope she took a couple of hits before she left.

I happen to look out of the window in front of my house to see what all the noise was. It was her sitting in her truck crying it wouldn’t start and they had at least five guys surrounding her truck, she was so scared, so I grabbed my gun and went out the door and told every last one of them to get the hell away from her.

She thanked me, she wanted to give me money for helping her, but I would not accept it. I would get her truck started and send her home. The next day her and her husband came over she introduced me to him, he gave me an Ice chest full of turkey necks and a cooler of beer.

Now everyday she’s coming to the house soon as she enters, she’s kissing me grinding on me, to make matters worse her husband started dropping her off at the house he told me that he felt safe knowing that she was in good hands, now did I feel guilty? I do not think so. I was definitely taking advantage of the situation.

It was time to give it all up, it was time to try and start a new life in Atlanta; I had heard so much about Atlanta. I never had seen so many well off black people anywhere else other then D.C.

I decided to take a train it took twelve hours to get there the ride was beautiful I had a sleeper car because they were having problems in the coach section. One of the porters asked me would I mine riding in the sleeper car. Of course, I told him I did not mine.

I enjoyed riding looking out of the window at the country side, watching DVDs, and just thinking what I was going to do I can’t remember who picked me up from the train station. But never the least I enjoyed the ride.

Now it was time to Man up.
Chapter 27

Atlanta

The day I arrived in Atlanta if I am not mistaken my stepbrother picked me up at the train station we went straight to my father’s place it was a beautiful day we were riding down Peachtree Street on our way to East Point.

My father had also retired to Georgia with his other family, my intentions was to spend some time with him I don’t know what made my father leave New Jersey for the south maybe because Bernice brother had move to Atlanta as well he had bought into the firestone station franchise.

Not long after my father move out here his girl Bernice died, now it was just my father and Clay and Teresa, Clay had a booth in the Rockport Mall on Metropolitan Parkway next to club Nicky’s he was selling jeans and shoes and shirts that he would get from New York and come back here and sell them.

Teresa was staying with some crazy person now we never talked about getting back together again.

My father would help out at the firestone gas station since he had time on his hand around the shop my father had a cutlass that he gave his grandson Lamond.

Not too long after I arrive in Atlanta my father was diagnose with brain cancer, I would drive my father to get his radiation treatment at the veterans’ hospital.

I arrived in Georgia the year of 2000, it did not take me long to get on my feet my brother-in-law Willie, Kathryn’s husband was working at the center for disease control where he would get me a job.

Once I got the job I started meeting many people meaning women now let me talk to you about Atlanta is the capital city of Georgia, located in the northern part of the state the seat of Fulton County.

Atlanta also occupies portions of DeKalb County. Atlanta is located on the Piedmont Plateau, a rolling upland region on the eastern slope of the Appalachian Mountains.

The city’s high mean elevation (1,059 ft) above sea level distinguishes Atlanta from most other southern cities and gives it a more temperate climate than urban areas located further south. Eastern Atlanta features the Martin Luther King, Jr., National Historic Site (including King’s birthplace; Ebenezer Baptist Church, where King preached; and the King Center, where his tomb is located).

The Hemdon Home (the residence of Atlanta’s first black millionaire, a former slave named Alonzo Franklin Herndon) and Six Flags over Georgia amusement park are located in western Atlanta.

While working at the CDC I met so many beautiful women and I stood out like a sore thumb they knew that I wasn’t from Georgia they all liked my accent you see I’ve been living in so many places it’s hard to determine where I am from my accent from New Orleans mixed with California.

I had my father’s car, I stayed with Claudette for a while then I decided to move in with Kathryn and her family, I later met this young lady that was also working for CDC she was working at the Yale building on Chamblee Tucker road that’s also where I started working at.

Now this women was just a one night stand for me I just wanted to put a notch in my belt I wanted a Georgia Peach everywhere I would go I just had to leave my mark that’s just how I was thinking back then I had to have a women in every state or city that I was in.

I would soon start working on Clifton road at the Centers for Disease Control and Prevention Center; this is where I would meet this beautiful women name Barbara, now Barbara and I would become an item.
Meeting Barbara

Now Barbara was so beautiful she is light-skinned long hair and fine as can be, she was from North Carolina, the way I met her was I was always messing around with one of my co-workers. Josie now this woman was also sexy and good looking but she liked women.

We were really cool I would sometimes give her a ride home from work, whenever I bring her home we would stop and get something to drink, one day while we were at work I notice this beautiful young lady walking by my station I asked Josie who was she and that’s when she told me her name was Barbra.

I was very intimidated by this woman and I had never been intimidated of a woman before, this woman was just that gorgeous and carried herself so professional and elegant Josie would introduce me to her.

Later on that day, Josie asked me would I mine dropping one of her friends off at their home. I asked her who was it, that is when she told me that it was the young woman that she had just introduced me to earlier.

I told her hell yeah! I would take her wherever she wanted to go. Now Josie started laughing at me when she seen the excitement in me, I could not wait to get off from work Josie and I use to sit around and look at women or her computer she always wanted to know my taste in women and she was always describing the kind of women she was interested in.

I was in the process of purchasing another new car. I had been saving my money to buy something nice. In the meantime, I was driving my father’s delta 88.I later put some nice tires on my father’s car he had true sports on it already and they had a nice sound system in it as well, that Clay had put in it.

The time had finally come for me to get off from work. I was so excited that I could hardly contain myself we all would leave out together, Josie, Barbra and I.

I just happened to be driving my sister Claudette’s SUV that day.

Once we settled in the SUV Josie was seated in the front seat and Barbra in the back seat they were doing all the talking when Barbra had asked me where I lived. I told her that I was living in Austell with my sister.

I told her that I was from New Orleans; she told me that she always wanted to go to New Orleans. She sounded so country. She told me that she was from Wilmington (North Carolina), city, seat of New Hanover County, southeastern North Carolina, a deepwater port on the Cape Fear River, near its mouth in the Atlantic Ocean.

Before we got to Josie apartment we stopped at the liquor store to purchase something to drink, then we headed to our destination, Josie had a nice place up stairs and down stairs, apartment and she also had a beautiful little girl.

Soon as we got in the apartment, Josie excused herself and left Barbra and me in the living area to talk, when Josie came back down stairs she was looking good and sexy as hell she was bare footed with beautiful feet.

You know I am a sucker for pretty toes. She had on some cut off jean shorts and had her hair down; her brother came over to the house with his girl friend, Josie would introduce everyone then asked her brother would he go and get a bag of weed, while he was away we were having small talk when Josie asked me would I do her a favor.

Josie asked me would I hit on her girl friend she wanted to see if her girl friend would take the bait, you remember I told you that she likes women. Well this was her girl friend her name is Terry now she was not at the apartment but she wanted me to do this tomorrow for her.
Terry was going to pick her up at work the next day and while she would be in the parking lot, she wanted me to go and hit on her. I really was not feeling doing this for her but they all talked me into doing it, including Barbara.

Josie's brother finally came back with the weed they rolled up some joints and started passing them around, now this was my first time smoking weed again, it was time to leave I had to get home and I also had to drop Barbara off at her place. Barbara told me she lived on Cascade, now at the time I was not familiar with the area she told me that she would show me the way.

We said our goodbyes to Josie and her brother, and then we were out. I got to the car, opened the door for her to enter once she got in the car she reached over to unlock my door, I notice the compliment, by her unlocking my door made me feel that she was willing to meet me half way.

Now remember, I told you this young lady was gorgeous, I could not believe the same women that I was so intimidated by her beauty would give me the time of day.

Nevertheless, to my surprise she was down to earth now she knew that she was very attractive but she did not let this go to her head this women could have had any sports athlete she wanted or entertainer on her looks alone. However, she is with me. Little did I know that she was feeling me at the time? That is why she wanted a ride home just so we can get to know each other, she would later tell me.

Now on our way to her place we decided to stop and get something else to drink. I purchased a pint of gin and some orange juice. Barbara asked me would I get her some lottery scratch offs. I purchased ten one dollar scratch offs and a quick pick she asked me to play numbers 764 straight box I did what she asked.

I did not know much about playing the lottery, but I did everything she asked me to do when I returned to the car I gave her the tickets she thanked me with a beautiful smile that made me melt.

I then pulled into the McDonald's drive through window while she was scratching off her lottery tickets I offer her something to eat she did not want anything I didn't want anything either I just wanted to purchase two medium cups of ice so I could pour our liquor and juice in them and get rid of the bottle.

Once I got rid of the bottle we were on our way, we were riding on the freeway having small talk, she started asking me about this other young lady who I had the one night stand with at work, I didn't know this women was telling everyone at work that I and her had gotten together.

Barbara was really making fun of me because the women I had the one night stand with was a little over weight, she was laughing saying yeah she said that after I finish making love to her that I started singing to her in bed.

I was so embarrass I denied that it was me I just told her that it wasn't me, now I'm tripping because we have been riding for over an hour and we haven't gotten to our destination. I asked Barbara where were we. She said that she did not know we were lost we rode around 285 one complete time.

We finally got there it took about two hours and thirty minutes to arrive at her place she lived in a apartment complex on Cascade, call the Sussex Apartments next to the Country Square Apartments.

Once I arrived there, she thanked me and asked me could I pick her up in the morning on my way to work of course I would tell her yes. She told me that she would be waiting on me out front in the morning. I told her the time that I would arrive she asked for my cell number once I gave it to her we said our good byes and then I drove off to Austell felling good.

The next day when I woke up I took my shower, headed out the door around 5:20 a.m. stopped to fuel up, once I got to my destination Barbara was waiting on me in front of the apartment complex.

I must say she was looking very good she greeted me with a nice good morning smile and a thank you, we did not have that much talk we listen to the radio, and she was in the mirror getting her together while I focus on driving through the traffic.

Now before we got there she asked me would I stop at the convenient store she needed some pantyhose, I found a store right around the corner from the job sight once she had purchase her belongings she was back in the car putting them on right in front of me.

I am saying to myself my kind of girl; down home not uppity at all know shame of her game so beautiful early in the morning I am wondering if she woke up like that.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Once we got to the job I dropped her off and told her that I would see her later, I went to park my car by my building that I was starting my day at. Eventually I would get around to going to the building where Barbara and Josie was working.

You see Josie and I was doing security, and Barbara actually worked as a civilian she had her own office sitting behind a desk in front of a computer all day.

Josie worked in the building with Barbara and I was more like a rover I would go and relieve everyone, they had like ten different buildings that we were working from all on the same sight on Chamblee Tucker road it was the IRS building the Yale Building, Columbia building, Harvard building and so forth.

It was time to turn on the magic I decided to go to the Dairy Queen for lunch I purchase two extra chicken tender dinners with drink.

When I returned I went to Josie building and told her that I had lunch for her and Barbara, this made her day she immediately called Barbara station, to asked her did she have a minute to come there she told her that she would be there in a second she told me.

She walked up and asked what was up and that is when Josie said girl Michael bought us some lunch from DQ, Barbara then would give me the big smile that would light up the room and tells me that she was thinking about DQ.

She then asked me would I give her a ride home and of course, I would tell her yes, and that is when Josie said well yawl could drop me off on the way.

She told us that her friend Terry had to go to work and that she was on her way to drop the keys off to her. She told me not to forget to hit on her when she gets there.

Now it was getting close to the end of our day, I always went over to Josie building about twenty minutes of getting off just to hang out with her, on this particular evening I was excited to get to spend more time with Barbara and Josie I really loved hanging with them both.

Josie would remind me that when her girl friend pulls up to do my best to win her over she said that she thinks that her girl friend liked men and she wanted to be sure.

The time had come when Terry would pull up right on side of my car now I had never met this woman before and now it was time.

I was in the building sitting at the desk with Josie, and Barbara was in her office tying up some things dealing with her job when we noticed Terry pulling in next to where I was park Josie would point her out to me pulling up.

I went out the side door so she wouldn’t see me coming from the building when I got there she had her window down listening to the radio I approached my car upon me opening up my door I spoke to her I can recall me saying hello to her.

She was nice looking red bone with a little acne, I extended my hand and told her that my name was Michael and then I had to ask her what her name was because she did not volunteer giving it to me.

She finally told me that her name was Terry, and that she was not interested in anything that I had to offer her. I kept pursuing when she finally had enough of the shenanigans she told me that she knew that Josie had put me up to it.

Now that the cat was out of the bag I apologize to her and that is when she told me that she was getting tired of all the games that Josie was playing I again apologize to her, and what did I know we became good friends.

Now Josie and Barbara comes out Barbara speaks to Terry then get in the car while we are waiting on Josie. Barbara tells me that she wants to be honest with me and tells me that yesterday she knew the way home she just acted like we were lost because she enjoyed being with me and she didn’t want the night to end.

I was really tripping when she told me this, Josie finally came to get in the car we headed to her spot, and we would stop and purchase something to drink again. Moreover, take it to Josie apartment once we get to Josie place while we are sitting on the sofa just chilling Barbara gets up and go in the kitchen with Josie I do not know what they were talking about.
Barbara comes back and sits down right beside me and that is when she turns to me and puts her arm around me a kisses me for the first time, we kissed long and gentle.

Our relationship would never be the same again we started hanging together all the time I would introduce her to my family this was also doing the time that I had so much going on my father was getting really ill.

We decided to move my father from his home; he would come to stay with Claudette and her family, Claudette bit off more then she could chew and that is when my father would come to stay with us at Kathryn’s.

You see I moved in with Kathryn and her family it was easier for me. Besides, I could be closer to my dad and be able to help. Willie had gotten me the job and Kathryn and Willie was going to help me purchase another automobile.

This was not the first time that my sister and her husband helped me out they also cosigned for me to purchase a new Honda when I was in California with Lisa this was before I was married.

This time I had my eyes on buying an Acura I was in love with them. I continue to drive my father’s car and I was in the process of taking over my father’s house.

Barbara and I would spend so much time together she would take my mind completely off Lisa and the kids. Since both of us worked in the same area we were together all the time, I was spending so much money on Hotels we would stay weekends at a time in them.

Kathryn and Willie had cosigned for me to purchase a new car I would find a Acura 2.2 coupe the color was champagne inside and out it was fully loaded sunroof nice sound system.

I had it for about a week before I started driving. I would bring Barbara by the house and we would sit in the garage in the car, talk, and listen to Jodie, now my relationship with Barbara would be base on a lie you see she told me that she had a little girl and that she was living with her baby father.

She told me that they were not together and that she was just staying there until she got on her feet, so I decided to get us a place of our own. I really was not ready to move from my sister’s place but I knew I had to go eventually.

Before I purchased my own place, I can recall one morning I was at home with the family I think it was Kathryn, Willie, my Mother, Keshan, LB, and I, when we heard a loud noise like someone had fallen.

To our surprise it was my father, he had fallen in the bathroom. We all ran to see what had happen my nephew was thinking fast, he pressed the emergency button on the alarm system for 911.

My father had really taken a turn for the worst it was no turning back for him so we decided the best thing would be for him to live out his day’s pain free and comfortable as possible, he was place in Hospice.

I was going to move in my father’s house Barbara and I but I later decided not to because it just wasn’t worth it we paid the back taxes on the house and then pull out of me living there.

I decided to give Teresa my father’s car since she needed a car and besides I had just purchased a new car. You remember Teresa she uses to be my girl friend back in the day my father’s girl friend daughter.

Barbara and I would visit my father almost every day we would all be there my niece and nephews, Claudette and Kathryn we would take turns staying with him.

On this one particular day Barbara and I were at the Hotel it was snowing outside when the phone rang, I had gotten the call that my father had died.

Barbara and I got dressed and drove to Austell Road to the Southwest Hospital where Hospice was located. when I arrived there everyone was arriving at the same time once we got there they told us that he died in his sleep. I thank God that he got a chance to repent and ask God for forgiveness. Claudette had gotten a priest there in time; you just do not know how much I thank you Claudette for that one.

I did have a chance to have a serious talk with my father before he had gotten real sick, I apologized to him for everything and I told him that I was not mad at him for anything I told him how much I loved him. I told him that I forgive him of how he treated my mother.

We all were worrying about how Lamond was going to handle the situation, when he was to find out about the death of his grandfather.
Michael’s Life Time Memories  By Michael Brown

My father’s death affected me bad but I would keep it to myself I really went on a rampage after we cremated him, I’m not going to get into the details of the funereal or about all the family getting together just know everyone was there. His new family as well was there.

The shock would be at the funeral home when we found out that my father had left my mother an insurance policy we were all shock after all them years my father had this for my mother and not his new family.

My mother would split everything up with Kathryn, Claudette, and I. Around this time I had transferred to Clifton Road to work, I had left Barbara working at Chamblee Tucker I would pick her up after work.

On this one day after work, I surprised Barbara by taking her to New Orleans I had to pick up some money any way from Mark living at the house still running the trap and I wanted to go to the Bayou Classic.

It was getting dark outside when I finally picked Barbara up I purchase a disposable instant camera and got us you already know we had to have our gin and juice.

I headed to Interstate 20 west, until I got to 59 south, then it was Interstate 10 west, home bound, it took us eight hours to get there. We had a good time I almost got a ticket; I wanted to see if the car could do the speed limit, I was doing 130mph when I spotted the state trooper on the median.

When I flew past him all he could do was look I was looking in my review mirror to see if he was going to try and catch me he decide to stay put, I just kept trying to get some separation from him before I slowed down.

This women Barbara could not keep her hands off me she was so thrill to be with me she was always excited to be with me. Once we had gotten to New Orleans, I would introduce her to my relatives in the seventh ward and the Saint Thomas.

I took her to the trap I had already explained everything to her about the lifestyle that I had left behind. She seemed like she was fascinated about it now she was going to see firsthand what all the New Orleans talk was about.

When we got to the house the house looked like a parking lot. All kind of cars and motorcycles was park in front of the house. Its morning time now when I walked up to the door they were already on me they were so happy to see me. I did not tell anyone I was coming. Barbara had to use the bathroom I escorted her to the bathroom and that is when I started walking around checking out my house. When I spotted Bonnie in my bedroom with some nigga, he was knocked out and Bonnie was to far that matter they were fully dress.

I reached down, gave Bonnie a big kiss, on her lips, and walked back to where Barbara was. I introduced her to everyone we took pictures I took her a ride on the motorcycle.

Mark gave me some money I gave it to Barbara to hold for me I went and talked with all my neighbors to see how things were going because before I left I told them to respect the neighbors.

They all said that everything was fine now my friend Steve wanted me to shut the trap down he told me he couldn’t make any money and that they weren’t playing fair now you remember Steve he was my friend that I grew up with I was having flings with his sisters.

It was time to leave we were going to the football game Grambling and Southern, the Bayou classic at the superdome. I was getting ready to pull out the driveway when Bonnie came running out of the house she was looking so sexy she had on a leather outfit that was all black and it was tight fitted. She asked me would I give her a ride. I told her that I would not disrespect my girl by giving her a ride and I asked her did she understand that it wasn’t personal she told me that she understood.

Then she asked me did I kiss her earlier I told her yes, and that is when she told me she thought that she was dreaming. Now Barbara gave me this look like nigga I know I did not hear what I thought I heard. I played it off as if it was not anything. I never saw Bonnie again.

Before we got to the superdome, I wanted her to see the projects were the Hot Boys hung out at in the third ward we were listen to 400 degrees by juvenile.

Now this is the same neighborhood matter of fact the same street my grandmother use to live on I took her to all the spots all over the city she seen all the young guys driving brand new exotic cars, they barely could see over the steering wheel.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

I took her to the spot after the battle of the bands where everyone hangs out at, show and tell. I introduced her to Baby and BG and VL. You see I knew Slim for a long time when they were trying to get a record deal my cousin and he were partners.

Barbara was taking pictures I had asked them if they mine if my girls take some pictures of their cars they did not mine; all the while, she was taking pictures of them. I told her in front of them I said dam baby I told you to take pictures of the whips not them niggas. They all started laughing shit I did to for that matter.

She did not want to leave. once we got back to Atlanta Barbara was telling everybody about the time she had. She was always telling them about all the people that I knew they started treating me as if I was the celebrity.

Every time when I went to Barbara’s office at her job she had pictures of her and me at the casinos and at the Bayou Classic and the Hot Boys, she even had a picture of her sitting on the motorcycles.

We were getting along good, but I was still whoring around I would later meet this women name Christine she was from Mississippi she was living in College Park she was working at this super wall mart in the car service section where you get your oil change and your tires rotated.

I was on my way in from work when Willie called me on my cell phone to ask me where was I. I told him that I was on 20 west getting ready to hit Thornton Road, he told me that if I could get there where he was in ten minutes that he would get my oil change. He told me that he was in the process of getting the oil change in the mustang that he had bought for his daughter my niece Keshon.

Well, I was there in no time flat the line had two cars in front of me when this young woman walks up to me and wanted to know how she could help me.

Willie told her that he also wanted my oil change as well she was fine and looked nice, by now you know me; before I left, I had the digits.

We were an item for a while as well we both purchased apartments around the same time. She moved to Douglasville, I would get off from work and go over to her place or she would come over to my place. This was a nice young woman I could have settled down with, but all I was interested in was the sex.

You see the only reason I purchased the apartment was I was thanking Barbara was going to move in with me. I could not get her to stay. She would stay about a week or two and then she would want me to bring her home. This went on our whole time being together. I was getting upset with her; all I wanted was to be with her. I had even gone out of my way, bought her an engagement ring, and proposed to her. I know I am married but I was not going to let this one get away.

One day on my way from work, I would see this car same make, same color and this female is gesturing telling me to pull over. I found a place to pull over this woman was sexy as hell her name she would tell me is Cheyenne. Now this women is Puerto Rican and Italian we became an item as well we spent a lot of time together.

Cheyenne was from Brooklyn, New York she and her Daughter would move to the same complex that I was living at Westgate Apartments on Six flags drive. She stayed down stairs right under my apartment, now her daughter was a stripper that worked at flashers on Roswell Road.

This story is starting to sound familiar, sounding as if I have not learned a thing. After all the things, I have been through in California uh.

I started spending a lot of time with Cheyenne. We were feeling each other now my appetite was back for sex. I had a very high sex drive that one woman could not satisfy me. I need to be with two women at one time or sometimes three if you had been reading from the beginning you would understand my crazy ways.

As time went on, I would move on Roswell Road to the Grey-Stone Apartments. I would start a new Job working at World-Com MCI in Alpharetta.

How I would land this job my friend name is Jonathan this person I knew was the supervisor there he told me that I would do good working in sales he told me. I had a gift, people were always drawn to me, and he told me because of my personality and my talking ability that I would be great in this field.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

He told me to come by and apply for the telemarketing position he told me that it is a fifty thousand dollars a year job if I worked hard. I could move up the ladder. I took him up on his offer and apply for the job.

Once I got there, I had an interview the same day, the next day I was hired. I started a two-week training period and once I finished training, I was put on the floor to sell the product.

Now when I first started I must say I did not do that well? I was even transfer to another department and that is when I found my niche.

I was so good I was always getting bonuses. I had a MCI debt card that almost every day I was getting cash bonuses. I was in the papers I was one of the top ten sales people in Atlanta for World Com.

This was when I would meet so many women, so many beautiful woman worked at this place and the atmosphere was great, we would hang out all the time it seems like some many women started clinging to me.

This was also doing the time that I would meet two women name Yolanda. Now the younger one I was crazy about we started going out to the jazz clubs I would take her and her mother out all the time, we would go out dancing this woman was like a model tall and fine.

Her and Barbara would get into it one day while I and Yolanda was on our way to Clayton County Barbara called me on my cell phone and asked me for two hundred dollars I told her that I would drop it off to her later.

Yolanda was impressed how I just told this woman that I would give her two hundred dollars I told her the relationship that Barbra and I had. I also told her how I was being treated with her now this made Yolanda upset she did not like anyone taking advantage of me.

I really stole this woman heart she is younger than I. I can recall one night after taking her and her mother out to dinner she asked if I could drop her off at home in Clanton County now once I got to her apartment. I had to use the bathroom and that is when I notice she did not have a bedroom set for her two kids.

Her kids had to be no more then four years old. As usually, they were fond of me.

The next day at work Yolanda asked me to bring her home and of course, I would as always because I was enjoying how she made me feel.

On our way to her place, I pulled right in to rooms to go on Mansell Rd. Now once I got there I looked at Yolanda and told her to go and pick out a bedroom set for her kids, she looked at me like what? I told her again, go, and pick out a bedroom set for the kids.

We founded a nice set of bunk beds, dresser nice lamps, everything that they needed for a reasonable price; I had it delivered the next day. After that, she was mine for the taken.

Because I treated this woman well we had started making plans she wanted us to move to California she wanted to be a model and she wanted to take acting class she had the body and the looks and she was smart and she was mine.

Barbara kept calling my cell phone asking me when was I coming over I kept telling her that I would be there later, that’s when I detected that Yolanda was getting upset, but it was also turning her on how I was talking to Barbara.

Yolanda said that dam I love a strong man who speaks his mind, so now when she says this, you know I had to put on, but before I could say anything Yolanda takes the phone from me and tells Barbara that she would appreciated if she stops calling my phone. She told her that she was on her time and that I would be there whenever I get there and if she calls back that she would tell me not to give her shit. Then she hunged up the phone. By Yolanda, doing this she had also made me feel good I just had to have her for sure.

Barbara and I would hook up again, only this time I am upset soon as I get there, she wants the money. I made her work for it I got us a room at the Hampton Inn in Dunwoody. I got us a few drinks, something to smoke that is when Cheyenne called me, and I told her to meet me at the motel.
I did not tell Cheyenne that I had company and I did not tell Barbara that Cheyenne was on her way. Barbara and I would have sex, now you noticed I said sex I did not say love because I had moved on I was feeling Yolanda now and Barbara was playing games.

While Barbara and I was in the bed we got all the lights off, only the light from the television is on when someone knocks at the door we are both in the nude. I got up in the nude to answer the door Barbara tells me to put on something I tell her what for this is my baby at the door.

Now I know they both wanted each other and I wanted both of them together as well, so I took out all my frustration on them both, hell I even let them tie me up for a little while.

Barbra was angry at first they both would later tell me that they did not like surprises. I was not trying to here none of that I had gotten what I wanted. Both of them were money hunger.

You know if I would have known that Barbara was into women at the time I took her to New Orleans I would have put Bonnie and Donna on her.

Yolanda and I would hang out after work and I would always take her to lunch, now I would also meet the person I want name him but he was getting weight sent in from the Virgin Islands by FedEx.

He was born in the Islands and it was something sweet he had going on. In addition, I started spending weekends with him I would bring over a couple of women and we would freak out all weekend long with different women.

Now I knew the production manager at this Radio station and he had people always-wanting halves and whole birds and I would be the middleman, this how I would tell him about my spot in New Orleans.

Now my folks were getting in contact with me telling me that they are ready to expand to Atlanta. I told them the business, we were going to wait on Vernon to get out of the feds, the crew was coming out to live with me, and we were going to take Atlanta by storm. I had to make a run to New Orleans again this time I was going by myself.
Chapter 29

Going home for the last time

Little did I know that this would be the last time that I would see my hood and I did not take advantage of the situation that I intended to. My whole purpose for going home was to go claim what was mine Kawanda.

I called Kawanda grandmother and told her I was coming home to talk Kawanda into moving to Atlanta with me, I was going to deal with Yolanda later, I couldn’t deny the fact that I was in love with Kawanda. She knew how I felt about her granddaughter and she knew that I would take care of her.

I also talked with her cousin and told her I would be in town soon; she finally got in touch with Kawanda because she called me back within that hour. We talked on the phone for about an hour we talked about everything we talk about my boy Vernon her boy friend my right hand man.

I told her the real reason I left because I was in love with her and I didn’t want to come in between her and my boy, but now my feeling have gotten the best of me I told her that I had to have her.

She told me that she knew all the while how I felt she told me that she was waiting on me to make the first move. I told her that I would leave Friday and that I would leave soon as I get off from work.

I also told her that I would call her when I get on the road, we had both agree that we would get a room and make sweet love to each other for the first time after all of these years it was going to finally come true for the both of us.

Now she did not know I was going to try to pressure her into moving with me to Atlanta, I was going to cross that bridge when I get there, I knew it would be hard because she was so in love with New Orleans.

Friday had finally come and it was time to leave I stopped to fuel up got something to drink and headed to the freeway I waited until I had gotten to Alabama before calling.

You know I did not tell my sister’s are anyone that I was going to New Orleans I was always like that I just picked up and leave whenever I got the urge.

I got in touch with Kawanda she told me that she was waiting on me and if she’s not there she told me where to find her, I was so excited I could already vision how I was going to treat her like she never had been treated before. I was studying her and her relationships for a long time I knew what she liked and what she did not like.

Whenever someone treated her a certain way that she did not like I would remember not to make the same mistake.

Soon as I got off the phone with Kawanda, I think I was entering Tuscaloosa County, western Alabama when my phone rang again this time it was Barbara, she wanted to spend the weekend with me. I told her that I was on Interstate 59 headed to New Orleans, she got really upset with me because she said that she would have love to come with me.

Before she hanged up the phone she told me that I wanted to go by myself so I could go and be with my little girl friends, I told her that I would call her when I got back in town, she asked me to bring her something back.

Once I arrived in New Orleans, I went to my cousins’ house first in the seventh ward I did not stay but an hour then I was off to my hood.

Soon as I pulled in the subdivision people was flagging me down asking for money, I think I gave away hundred and fifty dollars before I got to my destination.

I ran into Steve again he gave me the scoop on everything and then my boy Reginald informed me that it was time to close the trap down.
Michael’s Life Time Memories  

By Michael Brown

By the time I hooked up with Kawanda it was getting dark we all went to her grandmother’s house we talked had a good time I told Kawanda brother to go out to my car a get the gin that I had under my seat, I had stop at the store and gotten all of Kawanda favorites.

Kawanda and I would leave everyone at the house for a while and go to my house to see what is going on. Kawanda had also informed me about what was going on she told me she had got into it with Mark now Mark is Kawanda cousin and he is tripping telling Kawanda that she could not stay at the house when she wanted to.

Mark and I had a long talk he was short with my money now I knew what I had to do. I did not tell him my boy Reginald wanted to buy the house so I told him to get it appraised. In addition, when I get back to Atlanta I would have my mother call him or better yet I gave him her number in Chattanooga and I told him to call her.

Kawanda and I went to the neighborhood club that night everyone was happy to see me, I told Steve that I was going to close the trap down, and he was so glad he knew he would be the man now.

I was low on cash so I told Kawanda to come with me to the ATM machine on our way there we stopped for a red light when Kawanda reached over and started tongue kissing me for the first time. It felt so good to the both of us she said dam baby that was good I cannot wait to finally get you in the bed.

I was on cloud nine I am saying to myself that it is going down finally. When I pulled in the store parking lot, she started again kissing me. When this huge custom bus pulls up and its cash money, only this time they had only their up and coming new acts on the bus they were coming from one of the country towns where they had a show.

I did not know any of the artists but I had known the driver of the bus because he uses to come around when I was running with Michael.

After we talked we all went in the store they were buying all kind of sweets you could tell that they had been smoking their eyes were close almost.

I retrieved a couple of hundreds from the ATM machine got back to the car and I told Kawanda to split the money up with me she gave me back my half when she asked me to take her home so she can make sure everything was alright before we go. I was going to get us a room at the Hilton Hotel on Canal Street overlooking the Mississippi River and the city.

Once we had gotten there almost everyone was asleep. I went into Kawanda’s grandmother room and talked with her for a while she was lying down watching television Kawanda came in and gave her all the money that I gave her, that was nice of her that’s what Kawanda always did take care of her grandmother.

I told Kawanda right then that we would just stay here she was somewhat upset or really did not understand but my conscience started talking to me. The voices was telling me that they needed each other and I knew I was not going to do right by this woman although I would tell myself that I was not going to hurt her.

Kawanda would later ask me about Barbara because she had heard about her from the last time I was home. I was always honest with her about everything. I told her everything and I told her about, Barbara telling me that she was pregnant.

I told Kawanda that if Barbara was truly pregnant that I would take care of my baby.

We all were laying in the bed I had my head between Kawanda legs massaging her thighs talking when she felted a sleep, I politely got up told her brother that to tell Kawanda that I love her and to take care of herself.

He was tripping I told him that I am going home I told him that this life is not for me anymore. I went back in the room to get one last look at Kawanda I bent down to kiss her she smile and went back to sleep. Her brother asked me could he come with me.

He was on the run from the police so I decided not to take him with me.

I left the neighborhood and I decided to spend the night with Reginald and Tammy. Then I decided to head back to Atlanta, before I had made it back to Atlanta, Kawanda was blowing up my phone crying.
I told her that I could not go through with it. I told her that I loved her to much she told me that I had a funny way of showing it.

I told her that I would see her whenever I get back that way, are all she had to do was let me know when she was ready to leave New Orleans. I told her I would be there for her but I could not live there anymore.

Little did I know, that would be the last time I see Kawanda or New Orleans again.

My mother and sisters had all agreed to sell the house we sold the house to Reginald and split the proceeds. I had a talk with my cousin Ronnie when he was in town and he told me that it was the worst mistake I could have made selling the house that we called home.

Ronnie always coming to the house with different women as well.

He would tell me that I should have kept the house just in case I needed to go back home. I gave it some thought but it was too late.

I started putting all my time in at work I was working twelve hours a day and four hours on Saturday I was making good money but I was blowing it as fast as I made it. I would still have Yolanda in my life and around this time, I also had a couple more but by now, you get an idea what my life had consisted of. Remember this is my lifetime memories, I have plenty of them maybe I will write another book about the memories of my life.

My mother would take ill my mother was diagnose with emphysema, she gave us a good scare we all loaded up and drove to Chattanooga everyone was there.

We started going back and forth to Tennessee to be with her I would take Barbara with me on some occasions my mother and aunt got along with her well. Besides, I was still hoping that Barbara would come around, and be straight up with me, I was praying that she would decide that she wanted to spend the rest of her life with me.

My mother had to be put on oxygen the doctors said that people with her condition want live that long. I sorry I can’t talk about this time period of my life but this also would play apart in my mind frame this was a hard time for me.

I did not have any male friends in Atlanta other then the people at work and you know what they were into the same thing I was running from my whole life.

On this one particular day two of my co workers and I went to happy hours at Justin’s this was P-Diddy’s club while we were there they started discussing purchasing pounds of marijuana now this was my co-workers.

It looks like I am heading back to the same life again, I asked my co-worker after work tomorrow could he follow me to take my car to the shop so I can drop it off and then we could hook up and get a few women over and have a party then afterwards take me home?

Well the next day we did just that after I drop my car off we invited some women over to his place off Delk Road we had a good time he told me to just stay over and he would take me home tomorrow I agreed.

The next morning we went to McDonalds’ for breakfast when his cell phoned ranged it was my other co-worker they were ready to make their drug transaction he told me that he had to make a run to College Park and that he would drop me off soon as he picks up his package.

I am not going to get into the details but know this. I never made it home and it has been almost fourteen years since I’ve seen the streets I am writings this from the inside of the Georgia Department Of Corrections. I was indicted on Felony Murder Assault and Battery, Kidnapping, and False imprisonment.

Follow along with me as the saga continues, you will begin to see the transformation that take place in my life that made the man I am today.

Be on the look out for; prison life by Michael Brown.
Blame

These are the words of my dear friend Howard Neil, aka (coach).
Whom can I blame for my situation? Who is responsible for my condition? Is it my peers, my surroundings, or can I lay the blame at the feet of my parents?
Is it bad luck or could we just call it fate? The truth is it is none of these; my condition is and always will be the direct result of my own thoughts being manifested into actions.

We’re made or unmade be ourselves; in our minds we forge the weapons by which we destroy ourselves; or we fashion the tools needed for us to build ourselves up and achieve whatever aspirations we desire.

By making the right choices and through proper thinking, we can achieve amazing things in our life; but by the same token, through abuse and the wrong application of thought we will descend into a world of cognitive arrest.

Between these two extremes are the grades of character. We must understand that we are the architects of our own conditions. We and we alone hold the key to cognitive liberty.

We are all ways in control, even in our weakest and most forsaken times; these are the periods when it is most important to understand that conditions should dictate our course;

I hear people around here saying all the time “this is prison” like that somehow makes it ok to remain a fool.

Like once we are here there is no need in trying to develop ourselves.
Well I disagree. If you fall in the sewer you do not just lay there, you get up and clean yourself off. This should be the wakeup call that sends us in a new direction; that opens our eyes to a deeper understanding of what our true purpose should be.

We alone are in control; we hold the power that will dictate the outcome of our existence. Our future will be directed by the choices we make today.

I wish I could have understood this when I was younger and maybe I would not be here today serving time. Now my friend coach and others I have met alone the way are serving a life sentence,

Now our families have to suffer, worry, and sacrifice because of our transgressions. We are to blame for that.

Our condition is our own. Our suffering and our happiness are evolved from within ourselves; it is as they say, as we think, so we are; and as we continue to think, so we shall remain. As we change our thinking, our moral character will begin to fall in line.

Therefore, I ask you again who is responsible for my condition; I think we can all agree that I am. In addition, you, you are responsible for yours. Wherever you find yourself at in life, it is nearly always because of your own doing.
Acknowledgements

I would like to thank all of my faith and characters brothers along the way that I have met. Thanks for the encouraging words.
I want to especially thank my dear friend, Derrick Warner for believing in me, and giving me the opportunity to be a part of the faith and character dorm. You helped me to grow in so many areas of my life. Words cannot express the love I have for you may God bless you with prosperity with everything you touch you are truly an amazing person.

To my friend Patrick Pearson thank you for taking the time to educate me on the fundamentals of writing. I love you. Moreover, thanks for being my personal chef© and true friend.

I cannot believe it you told me that I could do it. “Wow”

My friend and brother Howard Neil thank you as well you are always there for everyone you have an awesome heart thank you for your time and patients in helping with developing me into the man I am today. I could have not done this without God sending you all to me.

Moreover, my boy, my friend Rob my little brother Robert Golden. I love you, and I thank you for all the support you gave me along the way and for encouraging words thank you.
Coming soon my new book:
Prison Life
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

Epilogue

The year is 2015 and I am just getting to a point in my life where I feel that my life experiences are important.

I choosed to write this book only for the purpose of my siblings and my kids, my nieces and nephews, that they might be able to take a journey through the life I chose.

I put the blame of the way my life turned out on my family for a long time, I felt that I was abandoned growing up, my mother was all ways working and my father was never home and my sisters were doing their own thing.

I blamed my sisters for leaving me to fend for myself. For a long time I use to envy the other kids around the neighborhood because they had parents that would make sure that they was inside the house at reasonable times, I didn’t have that, I didn’t even have anyone to make sure that I was going to school are doing my homework.

“Now don’t get me wrong.” I love my family dearly, and now that I am grown I know that they did their very best to make sure that we had a roof over our head and food to eat and clothes on our back.

I just wished that my parents had spent more quality time with me. To make sure that I was doing the right thing. And making sure that my life was heading in the right direction, I use to often wonder how come my sisters were achievers and I wasn’t, it may sound funny but I often wonder was I adopted, why was I so different, why I couldn’t be as smart as my siblings, I wondered what was wrong with me.

All I ever wanted to do was make my family proud. I took the wrong turn in life somewhere down the line, and I use to often wonder whose fault was it when things go wrong? That question arises in many human difficult moments.

For those who prefer placing responsibility elsewhere, the question leads to a wild-goat chase for someone who can be a scapegoat with the main load of the blame.

For those who prefer to sponge up the anger and store it away inside, the blame can be taken heroically upon themselves. “It’s my entire fault,” they say, “I’m the total failure” and even more people do both.

At one moment they blame themselves for the whole tragedy, at the next they take another swing at the scapegoat, blaming ourselves is useless, for a variety of reasons.

We usually blame ourselves for all the wrong reasons. (The crucial things that went wrong are not likely to occur to us alone.)

We are not qualified to sit in final judgment of our own lives. We so easily slip into total rejection, “I’m no good at all, I don’t deserve to live,” or we excuse ourselves lightly, “so what, I’m only human.”

To assume the right to sit in judgment over my motives, my past, and my true condition, is to play GOD; I do not truly understand my past.

I know that my memories are selective; I recall the thing that fit with my self-image, Friedrich Nietzsche, the Germany philosopher, put this pointedly, saying, “Pride and memory had an argument.

Memory said, ‘it happened thus and so!’ “Pride replied, ‘Oh, but it couldn’t have been like that!’ and memory gave in.”

Therefore, it is for us all. Memory gives in repeatedly. Most of the pictures we recall from our past have been retouched; most of the scripts we can quote from old conversations have been edited for us by pride.

Memory is a museum.

Rooms on room of memories are instantly available as one flash through collections of choice recollections at will. Musing through your museum, note how selective the artifacts are.

Are they art or fact? Did you create them to fit your needs or capture them to record reality?

Memory is mystery.
Michael’s Life Time Memories

By Michael Brown

“I can see it now exactly as it happened,” you may insist but it isn’t true. The best you can do is produce a biased series of fragments that serve to reassure you to be sure they do not recur.

The truth of your past is known only in part, even to you, especially to you.

Some people believe that memory is a camera. They assume that past events are accurately recorded through an objective lens and preserved untouched.

We have no objective past, our reflections are just that my memories mirror me and my needs, my values, my dreams, my interpretations of my serial life experiences. Memory is not a telescope for looking at a sharply etched and permanent image.

Memory is a kaleidoscope that reviews the past, rearranges its detail, and reinterprets its meanings for the challenges of the moment.

My story is my mythology of my life that guides the organization of my life, memory is a compass that repaints the scenes recalled but still points toward integrity.

Memory is a gyroscope that balances the self and maintains harmony and unity within.

Memory is my story.

Myth or mystery, it is still my story, and a story worth telling. Yes, it has been thoroughly edited by my pride, memory reports what took place and pride rewrites the data before the conscience—the perfect scribe—can get at it.

Yes, it has been recycled and the most recent forms may be made up of the original atoms, but the anatomy has matured. Still, it is my story of who I am today, what I am becoming now, where I stand in the moment.

“My museum tours daily from 4am—9pm.”

Venture into your museum. Claim the room. The treasure is yours. Explore. The valuables are precious property. They are evidence that you have lived, risked, failed, learned from the pain, grown, celebrated, broken free.

There are a few rules in my museum.

Appreciate the collected objects of art. Don’t abuse the privilege of visiting your past. Do not vandalize your valuables. Look at them in appropriate awe.

Do not criticize them, prize them.

Respect the experiences, use them for you not against you, and learn from them how to choose more freely, how to live more fully, how to act more faithfully in the future.

Acquit the memories from any and all charges. To attempt to change the Unchangeable is useless, what is done is done.

Be humble enough to take pride in your past. Great or small, it’s yours. Have the grace to be graceful for having lived. Accept the grace to own how you lived.

Going through our old memories to place blame is like hunting for a black face in a dark room at midnight wearing heavy gloves and a blindfold.

I want to, rather simply, own my past with as few defenses as possible, and live now in the present before God and with my brothers and sisters.

Recognizing how unable I am to judge myself brings me to awareness of how unqualified I am to judge a sister and brother since my vision is as impaired as though a beam of wood were protruding from my eye, I am poorly equipped to remove splinters from others, as Jesus put it unforgettably.

Pass no judgment,

And you will not be judged.

For as you judge others,

So you will yourselves be judged.

In addition, whatever measure you deal out to others will be dealt back to you.

Why do you look at the speck of sawdust in your brother’s eye? With never a thought for the great plank that’s in your own eye, or how can you say to your brother, “Let me take the speck out of your eye,” When all the time there is that plank in your own?
Michael’s Life Time Memories

You hypocrite!
First take the plank out of your own eye, and then you will see clearly, to take the speck out of your brothers. (Matthew 7:1-5, NEB).
Paul put it:
Love keeps no score of wrongs;
Does not gloat over other men’s sins, but delights in the truth, there is anything love cannot face; there is no limit to its hope, and its endurance;
(1 Corinthians 13:5-7, NEB)
Love ends blaming games and gets on to the real questions: what is the loving, respectful thing to do now?
Where do we go from here? When do we start? If not from here --where? If not now --when who—if not you and me?
Loving is owning responsibility, breaking the lead from the fine-line bookkeeping pencil, tearing up the scorecard and beginning again.
I got the insight of this from reading, caring enough to confront, by David Augsburger.
I pray that this book will help you to understand me a little better.
May GOD bless you all?
Reference page

Microsoft Bookshelf 99
Merriam Webster's Dictionary, 2000, 2.5 version
King James Bible
Patrick Pearson
Derrick Warner
Howard Neil
Brandon Green
Encarta encyclopedia 2004
Stephen m, Miller: when life gets rough
Debbie Ford: the secret of the Shadow